

I Was Lied to by the Most Beautiful Girl in My Grade, so I Decided To Go Out With Her

Table of Contents

Synopsis.....	4
Chapter 1 – Volume 1.....	4
Chapter 2	8
Chapter 3	12
Chapter 4	17
Chapter 5	19
Chapter 6	25
Chapter 7	28
Chapter 8	31
Chapter 9	33
Chapter 10	38
Chapter 11	43
Chapter 12	46
Chapter 13	52
Chapter 14	55
Chapter 15	61
Chapter 16	66
Chapter 17	74
Chapter 18	81
Chapter 19	84
Chapter 20	88
Chapter 21	94
Chapter 22	98
Chapter 23	105
Chapter 24	112

Chapter 25	116
Chapter 26	121
Chapter 27 – Volume 2.....	126
Chapter 28	132
Chapter 29	138
Chapter 30	145
Chapter 31	152
Chapter 32	160
Chapter 33	169
Chapter 34	175
Chapter 35	182
Chapter 36	196
Chapter 37	204
Chapter 38	212
Chapter 39	226
Chapter 40	236
Chapter 41	249
Chapter 42	264
Chapter 43	273
Chapter 44	286
Chapter 45	293
Chapter 46	300
Chapter 47(Koyomi’s POV)	310
Chapter 48	320
Chapter 49	329
Chapter 50	340
Chapter 51	347
Chapter 52	356
Chapter 53	369
Chapter 54	378
Chapter 55	383
Chapter 56 – Volume 3.....	390
Chapter 57	395

Chapter 58 398

Chapter 59 405

Chapter 60 411

Synopsis

A high school sophomore, Kiyama Kouyou was falsely confessed to by another sophomore, the most beautiful girl in his grade, Tachibana Koyomi. He knew it was a lie but thought it was okay anyways. Dating with such a twisted feeling.....
Hmm?

Before I know it, I really fell in love with her however....

Chapter 1 – Volume 1

My name is Kiyama Kouyou.

My face isn't too bad, in fact I think it is relatively nice. It's not a biased point of view but rather an objective one. That's what a few of my friends said. Even so, it's not as if I am an eye-catchingly good-looking guy. I give it a 57 at best. Well, my bangs aren't completely hidden, but they're long enough to reach my eyes. I have contacts, but they are a pain in the ass aside from the time when I'm moving a lot so I wear glasses. My face couldn't be seen either though.

To get straight to the point, I am what you call an asocial person. Although it's not as if I want to have that many friends either, I'm just tired of them making a lot of noises. It's troublesome.

Well, it's not as if I'm not aware that I'm bad at those kinds of tiresome and inconsiderate actions.

Just once, I would like to have an existence called a girlfriend in my life. I wasn't a particularly gloomy student or anything. In the first place, not speaking of those topic in the first place labels you as a pervert. If a goddess suddenly appeared in front of me right now and said, "I'll let you rub my breasts," I'd immediately pay 5000 yen. It is basically an opening. Well, I'd like to think that I'm strong enough to reason with them.

◇◇◇◇◇

"Yo! Good morning Kouyou."

"Hnn, Good morning Akira..."

"Haha, you are as sleepy as usual."

The one who is speaking to me right now is Haruyama Akira, the so-called cheery person.

In this class, he is my twin and the self-proclaimed Pope of Shadows. He is the man who is called the Emperor of Light (by me).

He is by nature a cheerful person, it's not as if we are particularly close but he talks to everyone equally without discrimination. He doesn't like it when I call him by his last name so I call him by his first name. He is by conjecture a terrific good-looking guy.

"Well, I watched WeTube up till late last night. I slept while in class so I have recovered."

"As expected of a smart person."

"It's just my talent. If it's just a regular test, then cramming it before the day of the test should be doable."

I'm proud of it, but I know that I'm smart. That's why I can pass the examination for a high school focused on getting its students into university. Therefore, even if I don't listen in class, I can get into the top 30 by just studying a few days before the periodic test. This is why sudden quizzes are so severe for me.

"I am praising that talent, you know."

"Is that so, thanks."

The conversation continues until the teacher noisily enters the classroom.

"Oh, you're as popular as ever. Just by coming to school, the class is already making a racket."

"You too, aren't you. Look at my face and tell me"

"How cruel, do you think I'm ugly?"

"It's the opposite. I'm saying you are good-looking. Do you know this? When I get to school, the girl's cheer of delight loudens."

"Hee, well yeah."

"Nonetheless, you sure are awfully popular"

"I know, right?"

The ones who have just arrived at school are Tachibana Koyomi. She is the most beautiful girl in this class or rather in this academic school year. She has rejected the confessions of all the young men, does she already have a boyfriend? Or so the rumour goes.

Well, the only boy in this grade who is the best match for her would be Akira, but there are eyewitness accounts that Akira is in another school(?) so it can't be him.

"I wonder why they are swinging around?"

“Well? There aren’t any good guys right?”

I took out my wireless earphones since I’m not really interested and answered sloppily while listening to the music.

“You really seem to have no interest in this, huh. I thought you wanted a girlfriend?”

“Eh? I’d like to get one but.. ”

“Huh? For real? Surprising... then why don’t you have any interest in this”

“I would like to ask you on the contrary, why are you so interested to that extent? She had rejected a lot of people until now so it is weird to have any sort of expectations, isn’t it?”

“But it’s not like you like anyone, right? Then wouldn’t it be better if you dressed up as prettily as possible? ”

“It’s not as if I wanted a girlfriend that badly.”

“?...What do you mean?”

“You know they say you change when you fall in love, or how the world looks different when you have a girlfriend? I just want to know the taste, whether it’s really true or not.”

“You’re weird, man”

“Not really. I still want to touch boobs, and I still want to lay my head on a girl’s lap, I think it’s relatively normal though?”

“But hey, if you are fine with anyone, why don’t you give it a try? Perhaps this is your last chance you know? You are not the type that can really get bothered if you are rejected, right? And there’s plenty of precedent for that.”

“Well, yeah. It doesn’t feel all that horrible to be rejected. But you know, even if this might be my only opportunity, it would be rude to the other party. Confessing when you don’t even like the other person. That’s no different from a lie. To deceive is a woman’s job, isn’t it?”

“Oh, you’re still a gentleman as always, you have a good personality, you know it?”

“Thank you”

“Well, I’d better get going. See you later then.”

“Yeah”

With that, I walked into the group where Tachibana was. It was a group of three boys and four girls from the top caste in this class.

The most beautiful and handsome figure in the entire grade.

And in addition, there's the head of the karate club, a rather handsome and hard-working guy.

Manamoto Taichi.

The refreshing and passionate ace of the soccer team.

Akita Noboru

This woman is

The manager of the baseball team and consequently the idol of the club.

Yumekawa Ena.

The class president and the next student council president.

Hirayama Nonoka

A cool and talented woman. The ace of the badminton club. She has huge tits.

Momoyama Shizuku

This is our class very own version of Kami7

Basically, we are always together and we spend lunch together. However, Akira is the only one who can't stand the thought of me spending time alone, so he invites me to lunch as well.

(I told him that he doesn't have to do this but when I told this to the person in question, he got angry and got depressed)

I guess I'll sleep until homeroom starts

I didn't know this at the time. To think we are going to have such a horrifying discussion.....

Chapter 2

During the lunch break, I went to the cafeteria together with Akira to have a meal. I could have gone to the classroom for my lunch but I thought I'd follow Akira anyways to the cafeteria.

"You, you're living apart from your parents right? To think that you could make lunch boxes on your own~Furthermore, it's delicious"

Akira has always been sneaking a bite here and there from my side dishes.

"I know what I like way better than the school's cafeteria, it's more delicious this way."

I lived apart from my parents in a condominium....., but it's not that we don't get along. My parents were transferred to another location for their job and I would like to try living alone so I thought the time was just right and so I lived on my own the moment I started high school. I was born in a slightly wealthy area, so I have never had a problem with money even though I live on my own. Well, at best you could call it preparation for getting into society and at worst it's just me working part time to fund my hobbies and as a way to kill time if I'm being really honest.

"Hahaha, you still have the same personality as usual "

"Any man who couldn't spend money on women and food is pretty much inferior."

"Whoa! That's a pretty nice thing to say."

"Not really..."

A little while later,

"It's about time we head back."

"Alright..."

Thus, I pass by my classmates as I walk in a straight line down the corridor on my way to the classroom.

"It kinda looks like everyone looks a tad bit different today... Is something the matter?"

It looks like Akira realized it too.

"Isn't it because today's physics class is a study camp?"

“Ahh.....I see.....wait, we don’t have time for this!”

“Yeah, well then I think we can barely make it in the nick of time.”

“Kouyou, you.... If you know you should have told me, you know!”

“Why? But it’s only late to this extent...”

I’m a habitual late-comer, but I will make it even if I’m just a minute late. Really, good grief to be in such a hurry.

“It’s fine already, just run!”

Seeing Akira running this frantically, I have no choice but to follow him.

This is a pain.....

When we were approaching the classroom, I heard some kind of pleasant voice. See? There are still people who hasn’t even arrived yet.

“Hooray—Punishment game for Koyomi! ”

“Go for it, Tachibana—”

“Eh—”

This voice, and furthermore “Koyomi”. No doubt about it

It’s the guys from Kami7

“Then, I’ll lie as I promised—”

It’s a surprisingly original punishment game... there’s no sense of humour in it. Well this is another class’s problem anyways so I shouldn’t really feel that bad about it. Not my problem, just as I was walking into the classroom

“Hmm, the other party is.....Kiyama Kouyou then~. Let’s see.....the time period is 1 month, okay? ”

“Ahh~, that’s fine. That guy is a quiet and obedient herbivore so you don’t have to worry about being attacked.”

Hmm? I eat meat though? I’ll attack if I have the chance though?I want to touch boobs too, you know?

“Tachibana, tell me if anything happens. I’ll beat the shit out of him.”

That's what the captain of the karate club, Manamoto Taichi, says.

Eee.....scary! I can't do anything in that case then—.

Or rather, isn't this weird? Whether you are a pervert or if you mess with her, her friends are going to beat you up regardless.

But this is troubling. I've been chosen as the other party in the punishment game. Usually it would be someone from a different class, I don't want or need to get beaten up. Yeah, I'm going to turn it down politely.

“Kouyou, I'm sorry...My friend....”

“No, it's fine...”

“I'm going to go stop them.”

After leaving that word behind, Akira entered the classroom.

“Oioi, please stop lying to me you guys. Could you somehow make it someone else instead...”

“Oh, Akira! Or rather, you should know about it too, right? Regarding Koyomi's situation. In that case, you should get a new boyfriend and fix it even if it's a little drastic!”

“In that case, it doesn't have to be the one who confessed right.....or rather, do you still have that trauma? ”

“Hahh... Isn't that obvious! What do you think I've been rejecting people for? In the first place, most of the guys who confessed to me are flash and gaudy, risky, isn't it?”

I see..... Apparently she has been rejecting advances on her due to some kind of trauma.

Or rather why didn't Akira know about that...

Yes, this here is one part of Akira that is useless. He doesn't have the capabilities to understand the woman's heart. Well, I guess it's a good thing to not know about the women's heart until you are popular.....

“But you know.... At the very least please give up on Kouyou...”

“What have you been on about for some time now, Akira?”

“To be frank... Kouyou is my friend. We are on good terms with each other, so I don't want him to get involved if it can be helped....”

“See? Then isn’t it perfect? He isn’t a bad guy right?”

“Well, that’s right but..”

“And he isn’t one of the people who was rejected by Koyomi anyways right?”

Ehh? What happens if I refuse though....

“If he refuses then he will be knocked down to his feet.”

Scary! The entertainer of the baseball club is scary!

With this, my path of retreat was hopelessly severed.....

“We are moving, it’s about time we get going—”

Oops, there’s a lot of them coming over here. I’ll hide for the time being.

Akira comes over here when all the members left.

“I’m sorry.....”

I couldn’t believe you feel so let down just because you couldn’t convince them...
your personality is handsome too huh. Secret technique! Ikemen
Restoration(Ikemen = Handsome)

“You don’t have to worry about it, you know, come on, let’s go soon!”

With a fresh smiling face I declare.Hmm—, something feels wrong here.

Kami7 basic specification

Tachibana Koyomi:

Beautiful

Height: 162cm

Average Grades

Great athletic abilities, second only to Momoyama

Normal-sized breast

Haruyama Akira:

Handsome

Height: 183cm

Good athletic abilities

A communication monster

Great leadership skills

Manamoto Taichi:

Not as good-looking as Akira but still relatively good-looking

Height: 185cm

Strong, anyways he is powerful

Akita Noboru:

An average good-looking guy

Height: 176cm

Has the communicative ability like the average good-looking guy

Has outstanding reflexes that is the top in the school year.

Yumekawa Ena:

Ordinarily cute

Height: 156cm

Has incredible physical prowess

Has incredible endurance

Slightly on the dimmer side in terms of brainpower

Tiny breasts

Hirayama Nonoka:

Ordinarily cute

Height: 154cm

Average at physical activities

Good endurance

Smartest at her school year

Average breasts

Momoyama Shizuku:

Closer to a beauty

Height: 165cm

Bright(Brainpower)

Outstanding reflexes

Clumsy

No feminine charms

Big breasts

Chapter 3

"I'm really sorry."

After school, I went to a cafe on Akira's treat.

I like sweet things so I'm ordinarily happy.

"It's fine really, it's just a lie in a punishment game. Ah, next is this extra-large parfait then~ "

He doesn't really have to worry about it but, well the person in question insists on treating me so I thought I should indulge him.

I had ordered three extra-large parfaits, two crepes, and four cups of cocoa at this point in time.

"But you know....."

"You don't have to worry about it. In fact, most normal guys would usually cry in happiness right? Even if it's a lie, dating that Tachibana for one month is unbelievable."

"I see... But what will you do? You said falsely confessing is a discourtesy against the other party right?"

"Nn—, for now I'll go out with her. There's also the matter of pride, you see. Being refused by an asocial person like me will make them look pitiful. And didn't you say you wanted to know what it was like to be her? I'm not particularly interested in this, to say OK directly will seem rude but, the other side also falsely confesses so I guess we're even then."

"I see.....Thanks"

"Un, leaving that aside won't you eat some parfait? Do you want me to give you a mouthful? Just a mouthful okay?"

"Really? Thank you...You really are a guy person.....wait isn't this my money in the first placeeee? Furthermore you bought a lot.....Just a mouthful...you cheapskate!"

"What a rude person. I'm not giving you another bite."

"Why?"

In the end I ended up devouring the parfait and went home just like that.

By the way I paid half of the bills. It's laughable...

◇◇◇◇◇

The next day

"Kiyama...after school can I meet you in the gymnasium for a little while?"

"Un..."

After school

“Sorry for going through all this trouble...”

“That’s okay, but can you tell me what you want quickly? I have a little business to do today.”

I just remembered earlier that it was the release date of a new issue of my favorite manga series. I’ll probably just say OK anyways, so I’d like this to be as fast as possible.

“Well, that...I...I like you, Kiyama. Umm... would you go out with me?”

“Okay. I’ll be in your care from now on. Well then.”
For the time being I answered and walked away.

“Eh? Wait a minute?”

“?”

I was called out so I turned around right away.

“Etto, Isn’t this weird? Isn’t this too fast?”

“?...I replied too quickly? Should I have acted more surprised, or more lost in thought? But I already had an idea of what you wanted in the first place...”

“No, that’s not it, it’s the fact that you turned around so quickly. Shouldn’t we have talked a bit more about it?”

Even though this is just a false confession, what a selfish fellow.....

Well, I guess that’s a fair argument though...who on earth would just answer and leave even though he doesn’t have any important things to do.

“No, I have some other things I’ve got to attend to, you see. There’s nothing that we particularly have to discuss, so I thought why not?”

We’re going to be together for a month whether we like it or not anyways. We’ll be together regardless of our attitude.

“Ah, Ahh I see.....Then see you tomorrow then.”

“Un”

So now that that’s done with, let’s go home. But then I suddenly remembered that I had forgotten something. Shit! I rushed to the classroom to go retrieve it.

After that, I retrieved the things I've forgotten, left the entrance, walked at the edge of the road, and I saw Tachibana on the way. She is still in that place...doesn't she walk a little too slow?

This has nothing to do with me but I'm a pretty fast walker so when I pace myself with people who walk slowly, my body feels pretty irritated, It's probably impossible for us to go home together.

I looked at the ground unintentionally and there I saw the baseball club practicing their batting.

Ka-ching!

It was a pretty good hit. It keeps on extending. This way, or rather than this way, it's flying over to somewhere a little further away from here.

“.....Tachibanaa!!!”

I might have failed in calling out her name. She looked at me in surprise and couldn't move. I run with all the power I have.

Can't make it.....!

I throw my body at Tachibana.

(Boom!)

An unpleasant voice resounded in my head. It hurts so much. It looks like I didn't manage to avoid it. It felt like my consciousness was fading. At this point, the school infirmary, no I'll probably go straight to the hospital right.....?

Even though I was looking forward to the new publication.....new publication?.....

Yes, that's right, a new publication. I don't have the time to faint here. My consciousness that was about to fade was revived and I somehow managed to stay on my feet and not fall.

“Blood, there's blood on you.....are you okay..?”

Tachibana's voice called.

I look at Tachibana, Ah, the shock of ramming against Tachibana makes me fall at my backside. If I look at it more closely, the skin on my feet was slightly chafed but not by much.

This is bad. I might get beaten up by that muscle captain at this rate.

“Ah...wa, This is my fault...I’m sorry”

“Please forgive me!”

I think she just said something but it doesn’t matter. Rather than listening to Tachibana, I value my well-being much more.

“I’m sorry. For suddenly ramming my body against you. Do you have any injuries? If possible, I’d like for this matter to be kept a secret...?”

“Eh?Eh, yes it’s fine but.... Rather than that, are you okay?”

“Thank you very much! Of course I’m fine!”

“But, but there’s blood.....”

Blood? I touched the spot where the ball hit me. Blood was really dripping. This is bad. I should go to-

.....

.....New publication!!

That’s right, there was the new publication. Now that I have your forgiveness, I’ll go home now.

“There’s no pain anyways, my consciousness is as clear as day too so it’s fine. Ah, and, I’m sorry for bothering you but can you return that ball to the baseball club?”

“Eh? Eh, eh....U, Un...”

I lost quite a bit of time. A lot of things happened today that I’m tired so let’s read the new publication and sleep.

After that I ran to the regular bookstore I frequently used.

When I got home, the bleeding was easily stopped and treated. After reading the new publication, I had my dinner and went to sleep immediately right after.

Kouyou’s impression of Kami7

Tachibana Koyomi:
A beautiful girl

Haruyama Akira:
Handsome, Personality is also handsome, likes to look after others

Manamoto Taichi:
Captain Muscle

Akita Noboru:
Has sweat that doesn't smell for some reason

Yumekawa Ena:
Kami7's top woman

Hirayama Nonoka:
Talks slowly

Momo Shizuku:
Silent, bad at communication?

Chapter 4

(Koyomi's POV)

"Fuhah! Hahahaha!.....I see, that seems like him"

I, Tachibana Koyomi, today confessed to Kiyama from the same class. Well, although I say confessing, it's just a penalty from a punishment game.

Of course, I know that this is discourteous to the opposite party. But even so, how do I say this, I couldn't just say no to Ena's vigor and in the end....

Because of that, for the time being I'll just make a report on the results but, if I have to describe Kiyama in a word, it would be 'strange'. I heard that he and Akira get along pretty well together, so today I consulted with him for the full details.

"Isn't that funny? He was hit by a ball and was injured to the point where blood appears but he can still say that he is completely fine right?"

"But, now you know that he is a good person right? He was a little cool to be honest right?"

"Well, it's true that I was startled for a moment...."

"Right? He is pretty cool, you know."

"But even so, isn't he too considerate towards others? You don't usually apologize for knocking someone over, do you?"

"Nn—, for that matter it doesn't really seem like him. He is the type of person who says that it hurts if it actually does... For the time being, it doesn't seem to be the case that he is considerate towards others as far as I'm concerned..."

“Is there any particular reason for that?”

“Nn—, yeah probably. I also don’t really understand that part either. I do somewhat get the reason why he became so self-conscious though...”

“Eh, what is it?”

“Perhaps he has something to do at that moment.....And that something is probably buying the new publication of a manga series that he is reading. He was looking forward to it, you see.....He is the type of person to do what he wants without holding back with all his spirit.”

“Just for a new publication?That somehow made it seem like he wasn’t interested in me.....”

“In relation to this, it is probably because it was a false confession. Isn’t that just fine? Besides you are still holding your trauma, if anything it’s better, isn’t it?”

“Well, that is true...”

I have a certain reason for carrying such a trauma against man in general...

No, I had. Before, even when I’m just looking at a man, I couldn’t stop trembling. But that disappeared with the help of my friend. It became a restricting trauma regarding my boyfriend.

But, I didn’t feel anything from looking at Kiyama...Maybe it’s because my real feeling is not springing up, I think.

“I’ll tell you what, this is a request from me as a friend of Kouyou but... ”

“?”

“He is a little bit of an oddball so it might cause some understandings but.”

“U-, Un...”

“Even if this is just a false confession, at any rate you guys will be going out for one month.....I want you to watch carefully. As a guy, as a boyfriend....earnestly. His good parts, properly.”

“Eh? U, Un.....There’s this where I’m sorry for dragging him into this, at the very least I’ll spend this one month with him as a lover.”

“Ou, Thanks, really.”

Besides, I don't know why but my interest in him was surging. Akira is good-natured, but it isn't usually the case that he praises someone to this extent. I wonder what sort of person he is...

"Well then, please tell me his contact address. You know it right?"

"No, that won't work. Now that you guys have already became a couple, you could just ask him yourself."

"I, I understand...."

From tomorrow we will be a couple.

I motivate myself.

The way the Kami7 calls each other
Tachibana Koyomi
Other girls and Akira: Koyomi Boys: Tachibana

Haruyama Akira:
Akira

Manamoto Taichi:
Taichi

Akita Noboru:
Noboru

Yumekawa Ena:
Other girls and Akira: Ena Boys: Yumekawa

Hirayama Nonoka:
Other girls and Akira: Nonoka Boys: Hirayama

Momoyama Shizuku
Other girls and Akira: Shizuku Boys: Momoyama

Chapter 5

"Good morning, Kouyou."

"Yes, yes. Good morning."

I was called out by Akira in the morning so for the time being I'll reply.

"Fuhah! As usual, huh"

"I think it's weird to be that lively this early in the morning though..."

"Now, now. More importantly, is your head okay?"

"It troubles me to be dissed suddenly like this...."

"It's not like that! You were hit by a baseball ball yesterday, weren't you?"

"Ahh, that. Well, they are just doing some batting practice, it's more or less soft, so I'm fine."

"I see. That's good then. When I was talking to Koyomi yesterday, she said blood was appearing from your head and was pretty worried about you, you know...Even if you're fine at the time, it might affect you later on, right?"

"Hmm, from Tachibana huh....."

Eh? From Tachibana? Could that mean.....

Rattle

"Woah! You surprised me...why do you suddenly stand up?"

I stand up hurriedly and immediately search for Tachibana.

Ah, there she is.

This is bad, this is bad, this is bad.

"Tachibana, do you have a moment?"

"Eh, U, Un."

I hurriedly head to Tachibana's location, pulled her hand, and walked all the way to the corridor.

"I heard from Akira.....that you discussed something yesterday?"

"Eh? Ah, Un. Because I heard you guys were on good terms....."

"Is it only Akira that you talked to regarding this?"

"U, Un.....?...Could it be that you are angry that it wasn't kept a secret?"

"Eh? No, that's not it.....I see....thank god—"

That's dangerous—. If the muscle captain heard about it, I would be beaten up.....

“Eh, you were glad that it was kept a secret that much? Umm, sorry.”

“No, it’s fine.....It’s fine but...it would help me if you kept this a secret. Especially from the muscle.....Manamoto, at the very least don’t tell Manamoto.”

“Muscle?”

“Nope, it’s nothing.”

“Nn.....?.....Well, for the time being all i have to do is to just keep it a secret right? Alright.”

“Yes, thank you.”

Haahh...So that is settled...

When I was about to head back to the classroom since I settled the matter,

“Wait a minute!”

“?”

“For protecting me yesterday.....Thanks...”

“?.....Ah, Un.”

Although I pushed her down, I more or less ended up protecting her....

I couldn’t get what she was talking about for a moment, I guess she was giving her thanks.

“And, also.”

“What’s the matter?”

“Since we are dating, won’t you exchange numbers with me?Do you use RINE?”

“Well, more or less.”

When lovers exchange their contact address, don’t they usually study while talking on the phone? I wanted to listen to music while studying, so to be honest I don’t really want to.....

“Your face says you really don’t want to!? It hurts me a bit, you know!?”

Oh, shoot. It seems like it shows on my face. I guess I really am bad at keeping poker faces.....

I want to play my game so I don't really have the time to use RINE. Even though just Akira is already hard to deal with.....

But even so, this dating thing is temporary anyways so I guess it's fine...

There's nobody who spends time on a woman who he doesn't like right.

"Sorry, sorry. Ok, is this fine now?"

I obediently started the app, opened the menu for exchanging contact, and presented it to her.

"Un, thanks."

"Just for your information, I usually go to bed at 9 o'clock so even if you contact me there's no point to it."

That's a lie though. I usually go to sleep at 2 o'clock.

"You're surprisingly living a healthy lifestyle."

"Well, that's how it is."

"Nn, thank you. Then I'll contact you at night."

After seemingly exchanging contacts, Tachibana returned my smartphone, and entered the classroom just like that.

When I looked at my phone, the name "Koyomi" was added to my list of contacts. Her profile picture is a picture of her and Yumekawa. Speaking of selfies, I heard that if a selfie has two people in it, one of them acts as a complement to outline the other's features way better.

Hmm—. She has a surprisingly nasty personality, huh...

As I headed to the classroom that way, people have been scrutinizing in this direction for some reason.

Fuhh.....I guess I can't conceal it after all.

There's no way, huh.....

I'll ask Akira when I get back to my seat.

“I wasn’t seen right?”

“It was probably jealousy. The news of you guys dating has been spread to the whole school as a rumour, you see.”

“I see.”

If it’s just jealousy, it’s fine I guess. I can just let them do whatever they want. There’s still time so I listen to some music, when I took out my earphone...

“Is Koyomi-san and Kiyama Kouyou hereee!!?”

The angry voice of a certain schoolboy in front of the door was raised.
Why am I the only one called by my full name?
Even though just Kouyou is fine....you’re being way too impersonal.

“What do you want from our Koyomi?”

Yumekawa answered.

“No, to be precise I have a business with Kiyama Kouyou!”

“Haah...what is it?”

It’s unavoidable at this point so I approached him and asked.

“Is it true that you and Koyomi-san are dating!!?”

“It’s true though?”

“G-guhh.....! You, I won’t accept you!!”

“Is that so. You are free to think whatever you want. Goodbye.”

“W, Waittt!”

“What else do you want?”

“I said I won’t accept you right!? Won’t you act more frustrating or anything!!?”

“It’s fine for someone to think what they want though? You? Why? You’re just an outsider, though? Or rather, is there some kind of unspoken rule that I have to get your permission to date someone?”

“Shu, Shutt upp!”

“The one who needs to shut up is you though?”

This has somehow become troublesome. I can't communicate with him in Japanese. Even though he is handsome, his intelligence is quite low.... What a poor thing.....

"If I said I won't approve then I won't!!"

"So?"

"Have a match with me with Koyomi-san in line. Kiyama Kouyou!!"

"I don't want to."

"Whaatt! And you still call yourself a man?"

"On the contrary, do I look like a woman?"

Is there something wrong with his eyes?

"Bastard, you don't have any confidence, don't you?"

I don't even know the content of this contest, no crap to base my confidence on either way.

Well, this type of person won't even propose a match based on brainpower, so I wonder if I could even be confident.

Nonetheless, this has become pretty bad.

For now, if I don't kick him out in a cool manner this might become even worse....

"This has become too troublesome so let's just stop, okay. Go ahead and confess or do whatever you want?"

"Ha!?"

"Like I said, since I'm in a relationship with her, you are playing games with me since you couldn't confess right? Then, if we break up, you don't need a match to confess your feelings right?"

"A, Ah...."

"Well, you can't do it right? I understand that you got rejected. You don't suit Tachibana anyways, it's safe because it's me, but to use that as an excuse is an out you know? Your selfish desire was seen through, you see. In the first place, treating a girl you like as a prize makes you seem so cowardly and improper as a

man. Are you really a man? I wonder if I could even give someone like that to anybody, my girlfriend that is.”

“U, Uwahhhhh!”

He roared and ran back. It was pretty interesting today. While I was laughing internally, I looked at Tachibana’s group. Tachibana seemed to look a little taken aback. The usual guys huh..

.....I was dumbfounded

.....,

.....that was dangerouuuss!!

Captain Muscle, he has been looking at me as if he is testing me. Are you her father or something!

“Whoo—! Way to go Kouyou!!”

The ringleader of the false confession, the Twin-tailed Demon. Yumekawa.

“Umu. I was impressed, you know Kouyou. You are a man!”

Captain Muscle, do I look like a girl too in front of your eyes?.....

“Hahahaha..! I told you guys before right? This guy is a good person!”

“That’s right. Isn’t that pretty ballsy of you?”

“UnUn, you were pretty cool. Right, Koyomi?”

Uh-oh—、Hirayama’s first line?

“Eh? Ehh, U, Un. I’m sorry about that...? Kiyama”

“It’s fine. I don’t really mind it anyways.”

I took my seat just like that, waited for homeroom to start, and the day passed.

That day, Kami7(mostly Akira) nonsensically bantered.

Chapter 6

The time is 11 PM. I was busy tapping my smartphone game.

*Vibrate!

Ah, the screen!

I was quite shocked that I stopped my hands for a moment.

By the time I recovered, it was already too late, I had already lost.

Damn! That Akira, even though I was about to play a game, he sent a message to me at LINE...! If it's something useless then you are so going to treat me a parfait!

As I was getting annoyed, in there lies the letter Koyomi that was just added recently. Aahh, I didn't tell Tachibana huh..... Well, there's no helping it. I'll forgive her.

When I was just thinking that..

"Yoo-hoo!"

Mmmmm..... This is all trivial.

Be patient, be patient.....me!

"What's the matter?"

Okay, I've handled it gently.

"Liar. You are awake after all."

Buzz !

"It's just a coincidence, good night."

Fufufu.....my special killer technique [Good night] !

This is the best way to end a conversation forcefully...Furthermore, the other side won't know whether I am really sleeping or not, so whatever I do is finee!!

Fuahahahahah! Even if you are a cheery person you wouldn't be able to continue the conversation! How do you like it!? It's 100 years too early for you to fight me !

◇◇◇◇◇

The next day

"Yo! Good morning, Kouyou!"

"Ah—! Good morning Kouyou." "Umu. Good morning." "Sup!" "Kouyou-kun, good morning— ! "

".....Morning."

When Akira greets me, the rest in a similar way joined in the bandwagon

Yumekawa, Captain Muscle, Akita, Hirayama, Momoyama greeted me in order.

Hooray—. I became closer to the Kami7—

Muscle, your habit stays strong huh!

“Un, Morning.”

“Your tension is low as usual huh.”

“I stayed up all night yesterday to play a game, you see. I think making it on time is already admirable enough. I’m going to sleep during class.”

“Kiyama, good morning. In the end you didn’t sleep immediately I guess.”

Tachibana spoke smilingly. Oh man...

It didn’t seem like she’s going to be mad at me even a little.....?

“Yeah that’s right, after all it wasn’t an important matter right?”

Even though there’s no particular purpose, she kept talking. I guess that’s to be expected from a cheery person. My conversation with Akira reminded me of this.

“Or rather, setting aside Akira, what business do you guys have with me?”

“That’s cruel of you—, aren’t we friends?”

You’re the one who said that, Yumekawa. Supposing I became friends with Kami7 and it became Kami8, after the promised 1 month ends won’t it be insanely awkward! Really, did these guys forget about the false confession?

“By the way—, are you free today? After school.”

“More or less, I guess.”

“Then, why don’t you go on a date with Koyomi.”

Ah, I failed to prove my theory.

Good grief, to make fun of us that way. Look, Tachibana is extremely bewildered. I guess I need a lifeboat here....

“No, that’s not really the mood here, anyone who shows constraint should just go extinct! Un! If I’m okay with you, let’s go on a date! Un!”

Holy shittttttt! Goddamn muscle ! He is always glaring at me whenever I do something....

“Is, is that so? Then wait for me after school, okay?”

“Un...”

And like this, it was decided that the date will happen forcefully. Well, now that I have a girlfriend, if I didn't go to a date with her, then I don't know what existence a girlfriend is anymore I guess. This might be a good chance. Gonna have to make sure to enjoy it.

How Kami7 calls Kouyou

Tachibana: Kiyama

Akira : Kouyou

Akita: Kouyou

Manamoto(Captain Muscle): Kouyou

Yumekawa: Kouyou

Hirayama: Kouyou-kun

Momoyama: Kiyama

Chapter 7

A date! An overwhelming date! My after-school date is almost here! The chime has just rang! This is bad! This is bad for my heart! My vocabulary is messed up too ! Thump-thump! Please stop.

.....It's tiring to force myself to act this persona. Forcing myself to raise the tension is also no good huh...But you see, if I don't try to act this way, I might suddenly feel like going home.....

“Well then, shall we go?!”

“Un”

“Have you thought of the places where you want to go?”

“Eh—, usually don’t men think of that kind of stuff? You don’t look like a woman to me?”

“In that case shall we go home? Immediately.”

“It’s just a joke haha. You really like to relax at your home, huh~”

“That’s right, it’s tiring to go outside since I hate crowds.”

“Everyone is like that too, right. That’s not a reason not to go out.”

Well, that certainly is right. Or rather, I didn’t realize how slow I’m walking until we walk side by side. My body is starting to itch.

Uuu.....this is unpleasant.

“So? Where are we heading in the end?”

“Nn—, since we don’t really have much time, shall we go to a cafe? Do you like it?”

“Nay, I love it. I have a sweet tooth you see. A cafe is fine, then. Un, I love it.”

However, a date is tiring as I thought.....

In addition to walking at the pace of the other person, there are way too many things to take care of, such as walking on the side of the road, walking slightly in front of the other person and checking the corner properly.

“By —the way, why do you say OK to my confession?”

“Why do you ask such a thing?”

“You obviously don’t like me right? I somehow feel bad about it. Making you go out with a person you don’t like.”

Well, even though it’s a false confession, it’s better to confess to someone who likes you anyway. It’s a win-win situation for both parties.....

Though as that may be, I have some kind of interest towards the existence known as a girlfriend, plus Yumekawa is scary, when I think about the honor of the other party. I feel like it would be rude to reject it.

“That’s not it, Tachibana. I like you, you know. It’s just that I thread on my own pace, or rather because it’s slightly troublesome because of my asocial personality. Besides, I’m terrible at hiding these kind of emotions.”

“I see.....thank you somehow.....”

...Fu-uh.....it looks like I somehow managed to deceive her.....

“Then, are you interested? In the reason for my confession.”

“Nope, not really.”

After all, it’s because I already knew it. I mean, what should I do if I heard it? Should I tell her now—? I’d be in trouble for sure. I made you feel better. Be grateful.

“Eh—. Why—?”

Oi! Don’t dig deeper into it!? It certainly is unnatural, just ignore it!

This is bad.....I was being doubted earlier too. I have to say something appropriate....

“Eh, hmm..., how should I put this? I’m the type of person who doesn’t really care about such motives. No matter how noble your motives are or how random it is, the ones that will last will last, and the one who ends will end in an instant, right?”

.....U—n? I somewhat doesn’t understand what I’m saying myself? This is bad..... You are not the type of idiot that will be convinced by this.....Un—...there’s nothing more to be done.

“I see—, there’s people who think like that too huh~. Un, now I, I want to stay together with Kiyama, you know?”

She was an idiottt!

Thank god—!

I was saved.....

“Really? Thanks.”

“Ah, let’s go to the cafe soon!”

“That’s right. I look forward to it.”

And like that, when I tried to quicken my pace.

“Oh? It’s Koyomi! It’s been a long time—! Are you having a date with your new boyfriend?”

I heard a voice from behind.

When I turned around, he looked like a flashy guy from his appearance.....

Tachibana had this kind of friend huh.....

This is bad. I'm fine with people like Akira, but this is just the type of person I'm bad at dealing with.

Chapter 8

(Koyomi's POV)

Kiyama Kouyou

At first, I thought he was just an obedient boy.

When I became a 2nd year student, he was a habitual late-comer, so he was noticed by the teacher at the start of the second semester.

Sleeping in class, and that's why he came in the middle of the second period. During the study camp too, he fell asleep in the classroom without us noticing it. There were times when he skipped an hour of work too.

When I thought it was unusual for him to not arrive late, when homeroom starts, he put on his earphones and listened to the music during the entire time. He has the aura of a person who doesn't want to be approached on full throttle. Once class starts, he sleeps so much that he won't even budge if you hit him from the start to the end.

As a matter of course, he also rarely did his homework and always forgot a lot of his things. The teacher warned him several times but his performance during the quiz was also very terrible too, so he was scolded every time. I picked up one of the things he had forgotten once, and I saw that he scored a 0 in a quiz paper. Even so!...Despite all that! When the time comes for the fixed period examination, he always scored within the top 30. It was at this time that his nature as a high-achiever is projected. Due to that, the teacher started to gradually loosen up and started to scold him less.

During physical education, there were several times where the boys and the girls combined to do some sort of activities but he was always in a daze on the side.

And yet his feet are fast, he was begged to be the class representative in the relay during the sports festival. Of course he rejected it saying that it was troublesome until they lost their momentum by saying, 『If I was chosen as the representative, I will be absent during that day!』 and by that flow, he was chosen. During the day in question, he really did what he just said. Apparently he had a headache.

It was around the time where people seem to have already forgotten about that when Akira turned to us and said with an amused laugh regarding the good parts of Kiyama. To be frank, I wasn't really interested in it so I didn't remember the contents of the conversation.

It was enough of a personality to warrant gossip but nobody seem to be talking about it in the class since he was obedient most of the time. He doesn't seem to have anyone else he can call a friend besides Akira, it was probably because of his aura that warns people not to approach him.

When the confession was decided, this was rude but, isn't Kiyama okay? I thought gloomily.

He seems obedient, and he probably won't be the stimulus to my trauma, and most of all, I thought that the probability of being rejected is high.

I don't want to brag but, I have confidence in my appearance and I'm pretty popular. That's why I was confessed to nearly everyday. For Ena to shake me like that was like a mud in my face. I laughed at the idea of beating him to a pulp but honestly I didn't really care.

The next day after school, I called him to the gym, and confessed.

Immediately, my impression of Kiyama changed to that of a weird guy.

The answer to the confession was "Okay. Then I'll be in your hands. Well then". After he answered, he was prepared to go home. It was so fast that I couldn't tell if he had rejected me or if he was telling me OK, so I stopped him.

After we talked a bit, he has something that he needed to do urgently to the point where he emitted the aura that showcases that he really wants to go home.

As I was going home afterwards, I was suddenly called from behind.

".....Tachibanaaa!!!!"

Why from behind? I wondered, but I couldn't think straight. It was because he was suddenly running towards me. I was startled, and more importantly, I thought for a moment that I might be attacked.

But that seems like it was just a misunderstanding.
He was just protecting me from the ball that was about to hit me.

I felt like I understood what Akira meant when he said he was a weird, yet interesting and cool guy.

I thought he was a bit cool at the time.

The next day, a boy who I never saw before came to the classroom, calling my name and Kiyama's. Saying something along the lines of a match involving me, I got a little irritated. And I was bad at dealing with these types of guys.

Kiyama drove that man away. They all were making fun of it but, I honestly thought it was cool.

That day, I kind of wanted to talk to him to thank him, so I RINEd him. I teased him a bit and he immediately forced me to end the conversation.

The next day, Ena almost forced me to go on a date with him. I guess she was just trying to tease me.

Be that as it may be, it wasn't as if I disliked the idea. No, in fact I was a little happy. I wasn't able to talk to him a lot yesterday so I can talk to him a lot today!

As we walked together, I noticed that Kiyama seemed to be a very thoughtful person, and his attention to detail was amazing.

Maybe that's why I was so happy and asked him about the confession. If he had asked me why, I would have been in trouble because it would have been a punishment game, but for some reason, I felt like I could answer him now.

The reply I received was surprising. The reason was also completely different from what I thought. But I felt like he was telling me not to worry about the past, and that I was forgiven for lying to him.

『Now, I want to stay with Kiyama you know?』

I unintentionally spoke those words, it might be my real feelings.

I tried to hurry to the cafe, feeling happy and excited.

This is fun! When I thought that

『Oh? It's Koyomi! It's been a long time—! Are you having a date with your new boyfriend?』

I heard a voice I thought I had forgotten, a voice I thought I had sealed away

Chapter 9

(Koyomi's POV)

“Oh? It's Koyomi! It's been a long time—! Are you having a date with your new boyfriend?”

I should have forgotten, I heard a voice that I should have sealed from behind me.

This is.....No.....!

Why.....? Why at a time like this?

Even though I was about to overcome my trauma, just a step further....just a little more.....if it's Kiyama.... If it's Kiyama.....!

.....No.....!

I do not want to turn behind.....! I won't recognize.....it.....!

I just want to ignore it and move on!

.....Despite my feelings, my body naturally looks back...

Aah, it was as I thought.....it was...definitely that guy.....

The moment he saw my face, he smiled.....

How dare you.....!

Anger rose in me.

He approached me while smiling all the while.

No...! Don't come here !

My voice couldn't come out. While my body is shaking, the memories that I wanted to forget was awakened once again.

Aah, everything is over.....there's no way now...

There's nothing that can be done now...

“You, are you Koyomi's new boyfriend?”

He didn't speak to me, but Kiyama instead.

Why?

Could it be that he planned on babbling about my past self?

Haha!He might be disappointed with me....

“Well, that is true but.....you are? Are you a university student?”

“Aah, my name is Sakai Shou. 21 years old and a third year university student—”

.....Phew.....21 years old!

I feel like Kiyama said that next to me, but I'm not too sure.

“Hee—, are you Tachibana's friend?”

“Well, I was her friend also but.....”

Who would, with someone like you.....!

“In the past, we used to play together as childhood friends.....”

I have thrown away that past !

I wanted to raise my voice to deny it, but my voice wouldn't come out at all.

I can't stop trembling.....

“Her former boyfriend, I think!”

He said it.....

“Eh! Awkward! How can you be friends with her? Doesn't it create a weird atmosphere”

“Well, we are childhood friends after all. And the one who dumped her was me, I was the type to not really care about that sort of stuff!”

Surely...the one who dumped him is me. But the first one who threw it all away was you....!

That, this is as if, nothing ever happened....!

“Hee—, you have a strong mentality, huh. Well then.”

This is a chance. I was just about to leave as quickly as I could when,

“Now now, it's been a long since we met—. Let's talk for a while.”

“Ah, is that so. Then I'll go to the cafe first in that case.”

He looks at me and after saying that, he tries to walk away.

Wait! Don't leave me!

You might be disappointed at me.....but I don't think that I can handle this situation on my own...

More than that, maybe I was expecting something from you.....

If it's Kiyama, maybe he would be kind enough to accept me.

But that was not possible. There was no way he could accept me.

"Now, wait now. I'm going to tell you an interesting story—, you come too okay? Okay!?"

"Ha, Haa. I got it. Then?"

"Don't be in such a rush. You know what's funny? This person has been in love with me since elementary school."

"Hee—, is that so."

"This person know where I live you know, so when she was in 5th grade, she saw me and my girlfriend having s*x."

"Well, isn't that tough."

"Well, she was so f#cking innocent so she didn't really know what we were doing. Guess what she said the next day?"(

"Then?"

"You look like you are having fun so do it with me too. Isn't that funny? Is she a pervert!"

"Well even I don't have an interest in doing it with an elementary student! And then, when the experience was gradually increased, even though she understood fully what that meant, she still said she liked me. When I was free, this person confessed to me when she was in her 8th grade. The confession was also very interesting....."

I feel dizzy. I can't even hear what they are saying.

Unable to see through my tears, I could only look down and turn my head.

Kiyama kept talking to Sakai.

Even if you made fun of me I'll just say something like, "Wow, that's interesting."

To be accepted. It might be foolish of me to think that way.

Setting aside a friend, this kind of talk is bound to disappoint a boyfriend.

The me in middle school.....I was broken while dating Sakai. Even I myself think that way.

『Brother Shou!』

『Brother Shou, let's play!』

『Brother Shou, look here!』

The memories of when I was a child.

Sakai was the only person who would play with me from the start, before I knew it, I had fallen in love with him.

I continued having that personality until middle school.

The me who have little friends in the first place, I liked Sakai as always. If Brother Shou wanted to do it.....What a stupid thing.

And then one day, when Sakai broke up with his girlfriend, I confessed to him.

Because of my personality, I'm not very good at communicating my feelings and so I sent a letter.

I thought I did my best to write it. I tried to write it with all my might.

The letter turned out to be pretty long, and just thinking about it now makes me feel embarrassed.

But, I didn't think anything of it at the time because I was successful.

Sakai was the flirtatious type.

Thinking that he was more the type of person who would do that, he worked hard to fix his personality and, perhaps because of his original qualities, he soon fit in with the class and made friends.

Ena, Akira and Manamoto were especially close to each other.

But in the end, it was just a false personality.

When she found out Sakai was having an affair, she didn't turn to anyone

At the very least, I'll be first! I pushed myself harder and harder. I forced myself to be cheerful, and I even became flirtatious. I even got arrested.

With this, look at it. Look at me.

That's what I thought, but I was at my limit.

I was crying. I didn't even know I was doing it, after school in the classroom.

At that time, by coincidence the remaining 3 who was left behind consulted me. It was there that for the first time I talked about myself.

When Ena heard that, she said "That's not right!".

I was happy when they denied it. I'm sure I've always wanted someone to stop me. I couldn't stop by myself so I need someone to be my friend.

And like that, I broke up with Sakai.

But it didn't work out that easily.

Scary...Scary.....I don't want to remember.....

Suddenly I heard a voice.

"And you know what happened to this person after he broke up with me? That's what's so funny! She...."

Stop.....! Don't say anything more..... !

What kind of face is Kiyama making? Is he laughing? Is he shocked?

I'm too scared to see his face.

"—————Um, I'm sorry. I don't think I get what you are talking about."

A voice from the side interrupted Sakai's voice.

Chapter 10

(Ena's POV)

There's no particular reason to the fact that I chose Kouyou as the subject of the false confession.

Of course I know it's a rude thing to do but, if I don't do it like this I might not be able to cure Koyomi's dislike of boyfriends.

Naturally I have some worries too.

No matter how obedient he looks, I don't really know anything about him.

It's just that I might have held some expectations.

He always seems to be living at his own pace, but somehow I feel like he has a heart. Even during the gym festival, he made a legend by actually not appearing during the day in question just as what he said he'll do. He looks like he don't usually think but it turns out that he's pretty thoughtful.

It's a shame that it's only in the negative direction, though.

Maybe he could be the one to save Koyomi? I wonder if Koyomi will fall in love with Kouyou in that way? That's what I thought.

Apparently it looks like my expectations was right on target.

He pleasantly chased off the weird guy who came to the class.

How about this? I thought, so I forced her to go on a date with him.

◇◇◇◇◇

(Kouyou's POV)

Right now, I am immensely irritated.

The cause is this guy. The one who had spoken for a very long time without shutting up.

A person called Sakai Shou.

Every time this guy speaks, the things I love, the things I greatly love, the things I'm in love with are getting further and further away from me.

Apparently the talking had reached its climax, and he was talking even faster. I no longer had time to even make a gesture to show I was listening.

It seems like he is talking about what happened to Tachibana after they broke up.

At that moment, I felt like I heard the voice of something snapping within me. I have reached the limit of my endurance. I'll let him have it.

"Um, I'm sorry. I don't think I get what you are talking about."

First I'll talk calmly to stop him.

"Haa!?"

It was obvious that he looks pissed off when I intervene in his speaking.

Be patient.....

If I get angry, I lose.....

“No, it’s not like I’m trying to pick a fight, and I’m not imitating Sandwich Man either, please don’t be mean.”

“I’m not trying to be a jerk!? What? Why do you suddenly stop me talking?”

“Um, don’t you think it’s enough now? You keep talking about Tachibana when she was in middle school, I don’t have any interest in that.”

“Hee—, it doesn’t matter what her past is! Something like that?”

It is as clear as day that he is smiling despite being angry. What a dexterous guy.

“Yes, I honestly don’t really care.”

“Do you think you are cool if you speak that way?”

“...?...No, I don’t know about being cool or whatever, but I’m already tired. Listening to you speak without stopping makes me feel irritated.”

“It’s so sweet of you to be angry for her.”

“I’m not really the type of person to get angry for someone though? I am angry for myself. What’s important is not the past but the present, right?”

“Stop saying anything cool. You will understand later? You should stop now!”

“To each their own, right? At least I’ve never felt bad about it, though, have I? ”

This man. Of all things, he denied it in front of me. I can’t do this anymore. I’m tired. I don’t want to talk to this person anymore.

“Haahh.....is it enough now? We are going on a date today. We don’t have time to deal with you.”

“Oioi, wait!”

Boom!

“Hey you, can you stop it already! I told you I’m on a date right? I don’t have time to listen to your bullcrap. I don’t even have a slight bit of interest in her past, you know. Don’t get excited all by yourself!?”

“What the hell!”

“In the first place, don’t ask me to agree with you every time. It was just too boring that I was about to play with my phone, you know? Right? Isn’t it funny? Just shut up! I’m not even listening to 10% of what you are saying! I’ve lost interest with the first word! You’ve been talking about it for a long time by yourself. Tachibana doesn’t even seem happy at all. If you want to reminisce so badly, just go home and look at your album while talking to yourself! It’s too damn long! We’re running out of time! We only have until 5:30 p.m.!”

Yes, this is the reason why I’m frustrated.

When I was walking, I found out through my smartphone that the cafe that just started last week has only a limited time on Thursday every week.

I didn’t know about it because I was too busy working last week to come.

If we miss this chance this week, it will be postponed to the week after the next since I had a shift next week. Every time this guy talks, the time is ticking further away.

The time is now 5:25p.m. If I hurry now, I’ll probably be able to only get one. Don’t joke with me.

He wanted to ruin that precious time by reminiscing about the past. You can’t help but be angry. Memories are only fun for the people involved. For those who don’t know, it’s just a painful time.

The present time is more important to me than the past.

He said that I would have regretted it so I had better stop. What the hell do you know about parfait?

“Huh? Limited time? Don’t say something complicated, damn glasses!”

“Shut up, you fucking naked eye. I wear contacts when I exercise. Don’t mount me just because you have good eyesight. You’re that kind of guy, right? You can’t be the only one to join in the conversation while your friends are talking about glasses and contacts, so you try to brag about how pathetic it is that you guys have bad eyesight. When you put on your contacts, everyone else is so used to putting them on that they’re done in no time, but you’re the only one who slows down and says, “Huh? What’s wrong? You’re the only one who slows down and tries hard to cover up the fact that you can’t put them on, right?”

“Hey,!, shut the fuck up!”

“So I was right.....”

“No! What about! Apparently, freaks deserve freaky boyfriends!”

“Eh?.....Wait, wait just a minute.....setting me aside, how is Tachibana a freak?”

“Ha, Haa!? I said it just now right!!?”

“Sorry, I wasn’t listening. Didn’t I mentioned that?”

“Oh, oh!?.....? No...so this person knew she was being cheated on and even changed her character to get people to look at her! How about that! It’s interesting, right? It’s funny, right?.”

“Eh? Not really though?E.....Eh? And that’s why you were talking so happily? What a happy person. I think it’s good.”

“Huh!? She used to be a shitty communicator and now she’s like this?”

“I mean, I may look like a jerk, but when I was in kindergarten I was a very naughty kid, and all I see in my photo albums are pictures of me running around the house naked. But then, one day, I saw a cool character in a manga that I liked, and I admired him so much that I started copying him, and that’s how I became the person I am today. Well, that cool character was such a scumbag that I hate him now. Normally, when you love something, you want to change for it, don’t you? It’s natural and I don’t think it’s strange at all. Everyone has an embarrassing story. I think it’s old-fashioned to dig them out and make fun of them. Besides, I think it’s much weirder and more interesting for you to be cheating on your girlfriend without hesitation and telling people about it.

“Tch.....!”

“If you don’t have any more business why don’t you just go home? I don’t have any more time to spend on you.”

“Uh.....Damn it!”

He said that and left.

Damn it! What kind of small fry character is that?

Anyhow, now I can have a parfait....!

Or so I thought and looked at my phone,

32 minutes.

Aah.....this is the worst, I didn't make it in time.

Uh....Damn!

..... Hahh, I guess I'll give up.

When I looked to my side, I saw Tachibana shaking. Was it so hard for her to miss the parfait? Or was it because that guy made fun of her?

I don't really understand but for now I'll try to ask.

"Ehh....Um.....are you alright?"

"I'm sorry, I might not be alright....."

Then she suddenly leaned her face to my chest and started to cry.

I don't know what I should do in this situation, so for now I decided to just pat her head until she calms down.

Chapter 11

(Koyomi's POV)

"Um, I'm sorry. I don't think I get what you are talking about."

A sudden voice from the side interrupted Sakai when he is talking.

It's Kiyama. Kiyama stopped Sakai from speaking.

"No, it's not like I'm trying to pick a fight, and I'm not imitating Sandwich Man either, please don't be mean."

His voice can be heard clearly.

Fufu, it's Kiyama-like.

"Um, don't you think it's enough now? You keep talking about Tachibana when she was in middle school, I don't have any interest in that."

"Yes, I honestly don't really care."

".....?...No, I don't know about being cool or whatever, but I'm already tired. Listening to you speak without stopping makes me feel irritated."

For.....me?

I thought he was disappointed in me. But,

I was wrong. It was a terrible misunderstanding.

On the contrary, Sakai got angry

A completely different kind of tears from a while ago is about to come out.

.....I'm happy. I was just happy.

"I'm not really the type of person to get angry for someone though? I am angry for myself. What's important is not the past but the present, right?"

It wasn't just for me.

Kiyama was angry when I was being mocked.

It was the same during the day when I falsely confessed to him. He was just protecting me.

The present is way more important than the past.....

Those words resounded in my heart.

I've never heard words that made me this happy before.

"To each their own, right? At least I've never felt bad about it, though, have I? "

.....Thank you.....Thank you... Thank you.....!

To look at me like this properly, to evaluate me without any bias.

Unlike those people who confessed to me up until now who are only after my face and body.

"Hey you, can you stop it already! I told you I'm on a date right? I don't have time to listen to your bullcrap. I don't even have a slight bit of interest in her past, you know. Don't get excited all by yourself!?"

This is the first time I've seen Kiyama this angry.

"In the first place, don't ask me to agree with you every time. It was just too boring that I was about to play with my phone, you know? Right? Isn't it funny? Just shut up! I'm not even listening to 10% of what you are saying! I've lost interest with the first word! You've been talking about it for a long time by yourself. Tachibana doesn't even seem happy at all. If you want to reminisce so

badly, just go home and look at your album while talking to yourself! It's too damn long! We're running out of time! We only have until 5:30 p.m.!"

I see.....

That gesture was just a random response huh.....

"Shut up, you fucking naked eye. I wear contacts when I exercise. Don't mount me just because you have good eyesight. You're that kind of guy, right? You can't be the only one to join in the conversation while your friends are talking about glasses and contacts, so you try to brag about how pathetic it is that you guys have bad eyesight. When you put on your contacts, everyone else is so used to putting them on that they're done in no time, but you're the only one who slows down and says, "Huh? What's wrong? You're the only one who slows down and tries hard to cover up the fact that you can't put them on, right?"

Fufu..... It was kind of fun to imagine.

I don't think that's what glasses mean in this context though.....

"Eh? Not really though?E.....Eh? And that's why you were talking so happily? What a happy person. I think it's good."

"I mean, I may look like a jerk, but when I was in kindergarten I was a very naughty kid, and all I see in my photo albums are pictures of me running around the house naked. But then, one day, I saw a cool character in a manga that I liked, and I admired him so much that I started copying him, and that's how I became the person I am today. Well, that cool character was such a scumbag that I hate him now. Normally, when you love something, you want to change for it, don't you? It's natural and I don't think it's strange at all. Everyone has an embarrassing story. I think it's old-fashioned to dig them out and make fun of them. Besides, I think it's much weirder and more interesting for you to be cheating on your girlfriend without hesitation and telling people about it."

Aah, I was being accepted.

That day, when I was crying in the classroom, thanks to Ena denial I was able to return to normal.

I felt like the weight in my heart went away.

I kept denying what I was at that time.

I don't want to ever remember it again and sealed it deep inside.

But I might be mistaken.

That was just forgetting. I can't do that if I want to overcome this.

The past that I rejected wasn't fun, it's not weird at all. I accepted that it was a normal thing.

You're much weirder than I am, he told me.

The tears overflowed.

"U...Umm.....are you fine?"

I am not fine. My tears won't stop. It is overflowing.

.....I'm so happy....I'm so happy.....I'm just so happy.

"I'm sorry, I might not be fine....."

I buried my face in his chest and cried without realizing it.

He just kept patting my head without saying anything.

Aah.....

.....I was.....saved.....by him.....by Kouyou...

Chapter 12

"Are you okay now?"

"U, Un. That.....umm, I'm sorry....."

After crying for several minutes, she finally stopped. Her eyes were a little red and swollen from crying.

"Eh?.....Ah, ah, well it's fine.....no it's actually not fine.....yes. Suddenly crying is not fine!"

"Fufu!What's that? ...And, thank you."

"Hmm?.....Well, you are welcome."

To be really honest, I don't really know what she is thanking me for.

For example, the former boyfriend from a while ago....hahh, if I think about it calmly, no matter how much he teased her, they were still childhood friends.

Hmm—? If it was about the parfait, wouldn't it be awkward if she got angry because of it? No, no, even so. I think the mood is kind of tense.

Then, is it the fact that I patted her head.....but I heard that girls don't like to be petted on the head.

Yup, I don't know after all.

Eh? There's no reason for thanking me? No no, don't joke with me.

Perhaps without realizing it, I helped her quite a bit. Surely, probably.

"Leaving that aside, what do you want to do? Do you still want to continue? The date. I personally think that stopping it now would be better since it is already this late. Definitely."

"It is true that it is already this late. What should we do?"

"In that case let's go home. My house is pretty near so it's okay, but it would be troublesome if it's far right? Shall we go home while it's still bright?"

It is roughly 6 pm now. The sky is still bright. I'm such a gentleman for letting her leave this early~!

"I, I see. It's close.....t-,then.....is it okay if I intrude on your house? I heard from Akira that you are living on your own right?"

"Ehh!.....Well it's fine I guess."

"Really!? Thank you!"

Well, to be really honest I actually do mind it, but it's my house anyways, it's way better than spending time elsewhere. It's fine then.....

◇◇◇◇◇

"Here, this is my house."

"Amazing. It's so wide. You were living alone in a place like this—! This is extravagant."

"Well, yeah"

The condominium I lived in is probably comparatively more expensive than usual. I'm not so sure I'd go so far as to let a high school student live alone in a place like this, but both of my parents told me to take advantage of them while I still could so I did.

"More importantly, is it okay to not contact your parents first?"

On the way over, I told her that I was making the food myself, and she said she wanted to have dinner at my place. I don't particularly have any reason to refuse so I accepted it but is it really okay for something as sudden as this to happen?

"Ah—, my mother is busy at work so she won't be home until late at night."

"Hmm. How about your father?"

".....you see, my parents were divorced..."

"Ah, I'm sorry."

"No no, it's fine. To begin with, when they divorced I was still a child so I don't really remember his face. There was an affair.That's why! You don't have to worry about it, okay?"

"No, I wasn't doing that though."

"Oi."

"In the first place, even if you told me that I wouldn't understand. I apologized to you earlier because I had no choice."

"Gumumu.....that's true..."

"In the first place, I'm not interested in Tachibana's home situation."

"Ah,"

"Hm?"

For some reason she let out a voice, and I looked at her face.

She is grinning somewhat and it gives me a bad feeling.

As I kept looking at her, either she realized it, or maybe she remembered something and proceeded to look at me with a smile on her face.

"What, what? To stare at me to that extent, did you fall for me?"

"No, you were grinning and it gives me a bad feeling."

"Oi"

How should I put it, her parents had a problem with cheating. Next her boyfriend is chosen from a punishment game.....what can I say.....

“Somehow, you don’t have much luck with men huh....”

“Ah—, you might be right about that. But even still.....”

She says while looking at me with a cheerful smile.

“It’s good if the ending is nice!”

“Hmm, is that so.....”

Wait, in that case isn’t it pitiful?

Well, it doesn’t really matter anyways. After all, I never heard about Tachibana’s love circumstances.

“Now, more importantly, I don’t want it to become late so I’ll make dinner now, is that okay with you?”

“Eh? U, Un....Ah! Then should I help?”

“It’s fine, there’s no need for you to do that. You can do what you want in the living room. Please.”

No, no thank you. Even though I’ve learned to cook based on my preferences, it might still change.

I haven’t particularly decided what I’m going to cook, when the noodles I saw by coincidence caught my eyes, I decided to cook yakisoba.

There was just enough for two people, and there is probably nobody who don’t like yakisoba.

◇◇◇

“Okay, it’s ready.”

I splitted the quantity, put the portions on the respective plates, and placed it on the table.

“Oh—! It looks delicious!”

“Well yeah, and this too.”

As expected, just serving yakisoba seemed improper so I made a quick and easy to make oyster egg soup.

“Oh—! This looks delicious too!”

“Yes yes. Let’s eat then.”

“Un”

“ “Thanks for the food(!)””

And then both of them have their dinner together after that. Apparently it suited her taste too since she smiled repeatedly with the look of a person eating a delicious food.

When I saw that face, a thought suddenly came to me.

“...How should I put it, it’s good.”

“Eh? About the fact that this cooking suits my taste? In that case, then I should be the one thanking you...”

“No, of course that too. But that’s not what I meant.....the fact that you became more energetic, I became relieved.”

“Eh, ”

“I don’t know the specific reason but, you were crying pretty bad just now right? It didn’t look like you were putting up a front now, if you could smile so happily like that, I thought it’s nice.”

“Is, is that so.....It’s all thanks to Kiyama.”

“Well, that is right. I knew it.”

“Fufu.....I don’t need to hold back right?”

“Because there’s no point in doing it. Besides, during the time you were crying, the time when you became lively, the one beside you is none other than me, there’s no one besides me right?”

“Well, that is true.”

After laughing, her face once again is filled with distress.

It’s just that, at the very least she doesn’t look pained.

How should I put it? Like she is embarrassed?

“.....Um, look here.....!”

“Hm?”

“My, my name...”

“What’s the matter, Tachibana?”

“... Well, you know.....we have become lovers, so call me by my first name, okay...?”

“Ahh, okay. Koyomi, is this fine?”

“Ehh!? Isn’t this too fast!? Even though I was pretty embarrassed to bring this up!”

“I understood the persistence of someone who asked for those kind of things from Akira, you see. I have already resigned myself.”

Akira was really obstinate. Until I called him by his first name, he kept following me around to request I do so. And that happens every day. When he came during our days off, as expected I almost snapped. As one would expect, I reached my limits after 2 weeks. It was uncommon for me to accumulate that kind of stress in 2 weeks.

Well, when I look back at it, it’s the same whether it’s the first or the last name. There’s no particular need for me to refuse to that extent, right? Maybe half of me just felt like rebelling at that time.

“I, I see. Thank you.....Ko.....Ko, Kouyou”

She called out to me while her face is bright red.

If it’s going to be like that, you don’t really have to force yourself.....

Well, it doesn’t really matter either way.

“Hm. You should eat it before it becomes soggy.”

“Ah, U, Un.”

◇◇◇

“Well then, thanks for today!”

“Un. It’s fine.”

After finishing our dinner, we washed the plate, and now we are in the front door. It is 7:30 pm now. As a high school student, this is not that late and so there is no need to send her back home right?

“Bye-bye!”

“Bye-bye.”

And like that, I opened the door and was about to enter the house.

However, just as the door is about to close, she turns around and opened it again.

“Umm.....Kouyou....”

“Hm?”

“Do you always pack lunch?”

“Un. That’s true, but why do you ask?”

“U-,Um.....packing it up every single day.....Is, isn’t that tough?”

“Hm?.....Well it certainly is troublesome...”

“Th-, then!.....Do you want me to make it for you?”

“No, it is fine. Surely that is troublesome. And I have already grasped my preferences perfectly, it is troublesome but, it doesn’t really bother me.”

“Ah,.....Is, that so.....”

“Then, bye-bye”

“Eh?U, Un...Bye-bye.....”

And like that, the door slowly closes. I locked the door and went on to prepare for the bath.

Chapter 13

(Koyomi’s POV)

This is weird....No, this is really weird.

On that day, when I was saved by Kouyou from Sakai, I completely fell for Kouyou.

And then, from that day on to today, I have been actively talking to him for the past 10 days.

But the more I talked to him, the less interested he seemed to be in me.

First of all, I can't speak to him at school.

He is always emitting the do not approach me aura.
Nevertheless whenever I called out to him, he gave me a glare.

Even so Akira and Ena are still talking to him, but I can't possibly do that.

After all, I was glared at by the person I like, you know? It's scary.

He won't reply to my LINE messages after 9pm, leaving that aside even if I sent the messages before 9pm, when the time comes he forcefully ended the conversation by saying he's going to sleep.

No, recently even that time has become 8pm, when it's faster it's 7:30 pm before he sent a message saying he's going to sleep.

I sent him a message asking if he would like to go on a date on the weekend.
When I sent it, he said that he would go if he could. But, that just means you aren't coming right!!?

Even yesterday too, what are you doing during lunch break—? When I sent this,
『I'm going to take an afternoon nap, good night』 is what he replied back with.
Cruel. This is just too cruel.

Just now too, won't you go back home with me from tomorrow onwards? When I sent this, 『I'm bad at matching my pace with someone else's from the morning so it might be impossible for me. Good night』 is what he replied with.

Aahh, I feel like crying.....

Does he really like me?
But he got angry for me.....

This is no good, no good. Don't be discouraged, do your best!

Come to think of it, tomorrow is just before the start of the one week test examination period. Since Kouyou is smart, why don't I ask him to teach me.....Fuhuhuhuhu

Yosh, I'm going to ask him immediately tomorrow!

◇◇◇◇◇

(Kouyou's POV)

“Eh? Today?”

“That’s right, why don’t we study together? I have parts that I don’t really understand....Kouyou is smart right? I would like you to teach me.”

“I see...”

Morning, during the one break period between lessons, Koyomi proposed a study group.

But, this troubles me.....

I basically just sleep in class and don’t usually do my homework, so I don’t know anything at all. Up until now I’ve managed it by cramming just before the test, my intention was to study from today too this time but.....

The me right now wouldn’t be able to teach her anything, and even if I study I could only make progress by studying myself while listening to some music.

Hmm, this is bad.....

Ah! But knowing what you don’t understand is just an excuse.....

“In that case, why don’t you ask Hirayama? If I’m not mistaken, she is the top student in our grade right? I think it is much better that way.....”

“Eh, uhh.....she said she wanted to study alone so he refused...”

“Then, mus.....how about Manamoto? He is smart right? He was in the single digit ranking if I am not mistaken.....”

“Eh, Umm.....he refused for the same reason...”

“I see... then me too, the reason is I want to study by myself. I’m sorry.”

Well, if 2 people have already refused for the same reason, there isn’t any problem for me to do the same right....

“Eh!? No.....isn’t that too cruel!?”

“Eh—”

Well, I can’t do that as expected huh.....

What Koyomi wanted to say was basically that she wanted to study with her boyfriend for the test.

Even if this is just a punishment game, it doesn't seem like she hates me, it's not that I don't understand the feeling of longing for something like that.

There is even the possibility that the duration of the false confession is extended.

In that case, then the thing about her friends refusing her earlier was a lie.....then she should've just said so from the beginning.

In other words, it seems that Koyomi just wanted to study with me for the exams.

I have been pretty cold to her recently too, it can't be helped I guess.....

"Okay, I understand....."

"Really!? Thank you very much!"

"But, I'm the type to cram just before the test, I don't know anything right now. That's why if there's something you don't understand, I'm going to teach you during the next recess. I'm going to look at my textbook during the class and study."

"Th-, Thank you..."

She smiles and says thank you to me while her face is red with embarrassment.

Well, this is the standard thing to do for lovers...

It's fine once in a while, I guess...

"You are welcome."

I smiled in return.

Then she went back to her seat, with her face dyed in red.

I see.....

So this is what it means to be lovers.....

This seems annoying.....

Chapter 14

Kouyou is as self-important as always today too.

Study group!

That is, playing for students, flirting for lovers, teaching for teachers, torture for parents. It's a magical meeting that could mean many different various things depending on the partners you are with!

After school, I was in a cafe with Koyomi.

"So, this is....."

"Ko, Kouyou.....?.....Ne-, this is too near...."

"Ah, I'm sorry....."

It seems like I was too close. I repositioned my seat about 50cm away.

"No, that's not what I meant—"

"Hm? ...Could the explanation be hard to understand?"

"No, that's not it too....."

"So, what is it?"

"Usually, when someone is studying with a lover, when they got closer, you should have said, 『So, Sorry』 more bashfully while moving away right. You're supposed to cuddle up to me while turning beet red. I know you want to flirt with me."

"So-, Sorry..."

"No, it will be too much if you act that way here. I would just feel guilty instead of flirting here."

Even though I've gone through a lot of trouble to give you the reaction you wanted.....

You are too demanding....

Or rather.....

"Look here, this is a study group in the first place right? There's no need for us to flirt right?"

"No no, in the case of a study group with a lover, it's a magical meeting that turns into a flirting session."

"Who is the one who asked to be taught?"

“.....It’s me”

“And who is the one who was asked?”

“It’s Ko, Kouyou.”

“Then who should you obey?”

“It’s you.”

“That is correct, very well. Let us continue then.”

“Ah, yes. Thanks.”

『I’ve brought you an extra-large strawberry chocolate parfait— ! 』

“Ah, thank you very much. Please put it over there.”

“Oi”

“No, naturally it would be weird to not ask for anything right?”

“You asked for a drink, didn’t you. And if you are going to order something, why don’t you ask me.”

“No, I thought that might be a hindrance to our studying session or something like that.”

“I’d rather eat it in the middle of the session.”

“.....So-, I’m sorry.”

Then the gap was made wider like that.

“Like I said, stop reacting in that way. Also, you’re too obstinate in this huh.”

“Fufu.....sorry sorry. It’s just a joke.”

The gap between us was returned to normal.

“How nice—, give me one mouthful please!”

“Ehh.”

“Wow, I’m terrible at po-ker fa-ces~!”

“I won’t give you the parfait no matter what.”

“What’s with that tenacity...”

“Then why don’t Koyomi order too?”

“I don’t want to—, one piece is definitely too much for me—”

“Hmm. Then I’ll eat for your share too.....Sorry! ”

“Okay~”clatter-clatter

“I’ll have two more of these same parfaits. And one of this crepe and one of that crepe.”

“I got it—!”clatter-clatter

“Uwaa, you don’t know how to hold back huh. Or rather, isn’t this too much? Won’t you get fat?”

“I do some weight training everyday, I run 2-3 times a week too you see.”

“So that’s why you are fast on your feet....”

“Well yeah..... Hey, if you aren’t going to eat the parfait then why don’t you go study? I’ll teach you the parts you don’t understand.”

“Eh—, you ordered a lot just a while ago, one bite should be okaay right?”

“No, that can’t do”

“Why!?”

“Because if I give you one bite from the parfait.....I can’t face the parfait anymore!”

“Ehh? What!? Is parfait that religious for you!?”

“At the very least, for me it is. Or rather, you could have just ordered. Do you have any particular reason?”

If the extra-large one is too big, she could have just ordered the usual one, to ask for a mouthful no matter how you put it.....

“That’s not it, you see.....I’m actually holding myself back quite a lot, but even if I just eat a small one I won’t be able to stop anymore...”

“What are you talking about?”

“Di-, I’m talking about dieting....! I’m more or less a girl too, right? Worrying about your figure is, or rather, it’s already too late once you get fat.”

“Hee—, is that so.”

What, so it’s just that.....

Fuuhh.....To deny yourself a parfait just because of that, you still have a long way to go.

“Whoa! I don’t think it matters though!.....Could it be? Is Koyomi the type of person that don’t care about her figure?!”

“No, that’s a bit of a stretch, but I’m not going to let people think I’m fat.”

“Apologize. Apologize to everyone in the whole country who is chubby.”

“You can tell a lot about a person’s personality by their chubbiness. I think it’s really good.”

“I think Kouyou is being too overly specific.....Then why?”

“No it’s fine, if Koyomi is fine with it then it’s all good...”

“Eh—, I’m curious so please tell me—”

“How should I put it, I think it’s a boring way to live.”

“Eh?”

“I was just wondering if living like that is fun.”

“W-, why....?”

“But you are forcing yourself right? Even though you actually wanted to eat it. That way of life is boring. If you want to eat it, then just eat it. If a grandma says it then it still makes some sense, but you are still young, you should live freely.”

“But.....Even though you ask me to live a fun life, Kouyou does nothing but sleep anyways. You think your future might be at risk which is why you are studying for the exams right? ”

“No no, I don’t have that splendid of a reason. I just want to sleep at class peacefully without being bothered by the teacher.”

“But even so....”

“To begin with, the word ‘easy’ is in enjoyment sometimes right? Those type of people who told you not to run to something easy. Then won’t it be as if you ran away from fun things? It is not easy to have fun, you know.”

“What do you mean?”

“Someone who sacrifices the present to enjoy themselves in the future, forgetting about how to have fun, is just no good. I don’t understand them at all. They are using studying as an excuse to run away from fun things. You actually want to have fun, but it’s actually pretty hard to do so when you try it. After all, if you study and get results, your path will be opened but people who do something they enjoy won’t get the same benefit. In fact, I’m worried that I might become like that to the point where the road ahead seems pitch dark. I was saying that you should not do that. Generally those type of people are the ones that couldn’t enjoy their life in the future anyways.”

“Why?”

“That’s how it is right? Because they don’t know how to have fun. Nothing was resolved because they were scared. Those people can be happy in their relative ways, but they can’t have fun. That much I’m sure of.”

“Back when we were a child, we could enjoy everything to our heart’s content, I believe that’s because we believed that it’s our duty to do so. But we began to doubt that when our ages reach the double-digit. We begin to feel guilty when we have fun.”

“The ones who lost kept on running. Studying when you are 10, getting used to corporate life at the age of 20, having a small kid at the age of 30, started getting old at 40, seeing your child’s happiness at 50, or something like that. Then you run, run and run. You continue running. The time when you can enjoy something is when you are old and don’t have anything to lose. Isn’t this ridiculous. I can’t even run for 5 seconds without running out of breath, and my memories won’t be as good as they are now. Can you even have fun like that?”

“I think it’s better for a person to spend his life desperately having fun than for a guy to make a fool of himself trying to justify his actions.”

“What is Koyomi? About the parfait, not only that. Are you going to keep holding yourself back from now on? I’m sure there are ways that you could do this instead of restricting yourself like exercising. For now.....at the very least, isn’t it late already?”

“?”

“There’s enough time after we eat right?If you want to become slimmer.....What will you do?”

“.....Excuse me!”

“Yes~, you are welcome~”stutter

“I’ll have this extra-large parfait!”

“Okay—!!”stutter

“Fufu.....It’s nice right?”

“Un!”

Mm-hmm. Holding yourself is definitely not good as I thought.

“Hmm—! This is delicious!”

After that, we completely forgot about studying, and went home after we talked for a while.

“Umm—who is the one who will pay?”

“Aah, I’ll pay.”

“Eh! I’m really sorry for this Kouyou...”

“I was aware that this kind of thing was supposed to be paid for by the man. Or rather, won’t it be embarrassing if I say I wanted to split the bill after I said I’ll pay? It will be far more satisfying to use this money that I don’t plan on spending on anything important anyways on a girlfriend.”

“Etto, Then....Sorry. I’ll take you up on your offer...”

“Un. Don’t worry about it.”

We didn’t do anything in particular after that, and she went home after a while.

It was a fun study group on its own right.

Chapter 15

New character introduction!

“Hey hey, let’s study together too today!”

“Aah, I’m really sorry but I can’t today. I have a part-time shift.”

“What do you mean by that.....what have you been up to until now.....tch—, I see—. Then how about the day after tomorrow?”

“If that’s the case then it’s fine.”

“Hooray—! Thanks!”

The next day, Koyomi once again proposes that we should have a study group once more when we go to school in the morning.

“Kouyou, can you come with me after school for a while?”

This time, the muscle captain asked.

“Hmm? Didn’t you hear the conversation from a while ago? I have a part-time job today.”

“Aah, that’s not it. It won’t take that much time so will you please come?”

I see.....It won’t take that much time huh.

Which means that it seems like I won’t be beaten up.

No, maybe they might be able to beat me down within 10 seconds.

Oh boy.....

“Sorry. I have to go soon. I don’t even have 5 seconds to spare.”

If it’s 5 seconds, then it’s probably impossible for them to beat me as expected.
Maybe. Probably

“I see.....Then, can it be after you are done with your work? I would like it to be done as quickly as possible but if it’s still impossible, then can you spare a little bit of your time before your date with Koyomi tomorrow?.....Please!”

The muscle captain bowed to me, what a surprise.

U—n, does he want to beat me up that badly?

Was it because of her crying the other day? But that isn’t my fault though? Isn’t this a misunderstanding?

However, I’d feel kind of guilty if this continues.....

“Then, is today no good?”

“Not in front of too many people.....”

“Then, it’s fine after work”

It can’t be helped. It’s true that I made her cry after all.....

“Really!? Sorry!.....By the way, where do you work.....?”

“Aah.....the family restaurant in front of the station stops at 9 pm.”

“Aah, it’s not too crowded there.....”

“Don’t say that, the shop manager really fusses about that.”

“I, I see. Then at that time, I’ll wait in front, come when you are done!”

“Okay okay, when I’m done okay.”

And like that, captain muscle went back.

Haah.....This is depressing...

◇◇◇◇◇

“Hi!”

“Oh—, Kouyou-kun! Good morning.”

“Hello”

“Hahaha, you’re still the same as always—”

This is Kenji Oyamada, the manager of this family restaurant.

Lonely, 30 and still single.

“Ah! Kouyou-senpai! Good morning! I love you!”

“Hey, hey”

This one is Hayama Rumi, a junior of mine by 1 year.

If you are just judging her from her appearance, then she might be ranked as a beautiful girl even amongst Kami7. No, not just her appearance. Apparently this girl is pretty smart too. It’s just that....

“Mou—, even though you are a virgin, you still don’t react well—. Normally someone would go “M-, me too” and say a creepy line like that, you know?”

“I don’t have the time to deal with every single joke of yours, and I’m not a munchkin but a pervert you know?”

“Eeh—, gross.....”

She is the type of girl who can be annoying to deal with if you get involved with her, and she has a little bit of a sharp tongue which doesn’t hesitate to say what’s on her mind.

Haahh.....This is why I don’t like this. When my shift overlaps with her....

“Mou! I won’t give Kouyou-chan to Rumi-chan! Kouyou-chan is mine, you know!”

Uwaah.....This is the worst....

Like the manager, Nene Yashiro is one of the oldest men in this family restaurant.

His real name is Tochiro Yashiro.

The so called faggot. And for some reason, his eyes is on me.

Working with both of them at the same time is really tiring.

Mentally speaking.....

“Uwaa, Nene-san is gross.”

“Rumi-chan! How could you say that! Faggots are the most noble and beautiful race! Hey! Kouyou-chan!” (TLN: Man, I’m dying internally.....)

“Yes yes, you are right”

“See!”

“Eeh! Is senpai aiming to be a faggot too....Gross~”

“Ah, Is that true!? It’s true that Kouyou has a nice body, you might have a thing for this....! Then you can have this!”

The thing that he passed on was.....

[How to be a Faggot Introductory Book  Beginner's Edition] is the title of the book.

“This is my own personal work! First, let's learn the basics!”

Annoying, this is very annoying.

First, Rumi-chan.....the way he ends her name is gross. Na no? I'm not sure whether this is gross or not but it's really annoying. (TLN: Nano here is *なの*, as in the way someone probably ends their sentence in. Correct me if I'm mistaken though)

After that, Nene-san.

Why do you even make this kind of book?

Or rather, what do you mean by beginner's training? Or for beginners?

Is it that complicated to be a faggot?

Aren't you talking about the guy who is confused over his gender?

But this book, it really is revolting. The heart symbol is so exquisitely creepy, it gives me goosebumps.

“Haah.....I don't want this book. I'm not trying to be one so...”

“Ah, that's too bad. If you became a faggot, you would be free from all ties and could enjoy life as if you were naked!”

Ah? Is that true.....it might be nice...

“Fuuhh.....isn't that nice~. It's really embarrassing to have two gay men at your part-time job. In the first place, senpai could probably only be an apprentice at best. It's really creepy~”

“Ah, is that so? If it's Kouyou-chan, then he can definitely become a splendid faggot! He has talent! If all goes well, becoming like me, an Okama Master, is no longer a dream!”

“I don't need that kind of shitty talent.”

What is Okama Master in the first place?

Do you even have that title?

“By the way, I’ve done some further training and I’m now trying for the highest rank, Oka Max Form!”

“No no, senpai can’t be Oka Master, he can’t even become Oka Mambo.” (TLN: Apparently mambo is some kind of dance?)

So what’s with the title?

Aside from Nene-san, why does Rumi-chan even know about Okama in the first place? Do you assume that you need to go through trials to be an okama?

Haahhh.....My heart is sinking.....

Heroine? Guess two more to the mix.

Character specifications

Shop Manager, Kenji Oyamada
Height:178cm
Medium height, medium build, nothing special.

Junior Coworker, Hayami Rumi
Height: 154cm
Beautiful, average chest
Sharp tongue

Okama Master, Nene Yashiro
Height: 190cm
Old man
Muscular.

Chapter 16

“Haah—, it’s so peaceful without customers huh~”

“Uguh!”

“That’s right, now that I have some free time, I guess I’ll do some muscle-training.”

“Ha!”

“Both of you, stop it. The manager is suffering.”

“Oohh....Kouyou-kun...”

“It’s because you’re too noisy.”

“Uugh!... You too!”

“Senpai—! Won’t you play cards with me~?”

“Kouyou-chan! Won’t you do some muscle training with me!? I have two dumbbells!”

“Wait a minute Nene-san! I invited him first though?”

“Ah? Kouyou-chan would be better off doing muscle training though?”

「 Which one (is it) (are you choosing) ! 」 」

“I’ll pass for both.....or rather, why don’t you invite the manager?”

“Because the manager is weak”

“Because Kenji-chan is incompetent.”

“Then why don’t both of you do some muscle training with cards?”

“” Hah!””

“That seems like a good idea!”

“That seems nice!”

“Let’s do it! Nene-san!”

“Rumi-chan!”

“No, you don’t!”

Haah.....when both of them are present, I somehow feel like I’m playing the role of a straight man.

“Or rather~, senpai’s tension seems lower than usual?” (TLN: Senpai is a term for an upperclassman in Japan if you don’t know.)

“Eh? Isn’t he always like this?”

“You’re too easy-going manager~. He looks less excited than usual. I have confidence in this kind of matter!”

“Let’s see.....it seems like your muscles have atrophied more than usual!”

“Rumi-chan’s and Nene-san’s perception(LOL) are amazing...”

“What do you mean by (LOL) !?”

“What’s the matter~?”

“I have told you before regarding that time when I got a girlfriend through a false confession right?”

“Ah! Don’t ignore me! Fine then!”

“What’s the matter with that? Don’t tell me you got dumped!”

“Calm down, it’s not that.”

“Tch! I was planning to comfort the heartbroken senpai, make him fall in love with me and dump him immediately when he confessed.....”

“So you were planning such a dreadful plan.....”

“Then what’s the case~?”

“Are you still going to ignore me!?”

“I made her cry the other day because of some things that happened at the time..... I think I might be beaten up for that—”

“Hooray—!”

“You hate me right, Rumi-chan? That must be it.”

“Is that so!?”

“There’s no way. I love you so much you know—!”

“Ah, I’m happy.”

“Yes yes”

“I’m so happy—!”

“Just a minute Nene-san, you have been very noisy since just now.”

“You’re so harsh!”

“Then, what actually happened? Senpai. I don’t think you are in a position to complain even if you were beaten up and sent to the hospital.”

“I won’t say it’s that harsh but I wonder when it will get to that point.”

“Ah, I’m so-rry! I unintentionally revealed my wish!”

“You hate me after all right?Haa.....the one who made her cry wasn’t me.....but they might misunderstand the situation...”

“Then you have to convince them! Like asking for a testimony from your girlfriend or something!”

“But I have a promise to meet them after work is over...”

“Ouch—! I’ll remember you for 3 days!”

“I won’t forget your body too, Kouyou-chan!”

“I’ll forget both of you in an instant. My memories will be erased the moment work is over.”

“You’re heartless, Kouyou-chan! Were you just playing with me on that day!?”

“Uwahh—, you’re cru-el senpai!”

“There wasn’t any night like that!.....Haah, it’s tiring so won’t you stop? Both of you”

“If you are tired then it means that you lack stamina! Let’s do some muscle training!”

“I’m tired mentally rather than physically though.”

◇◇◇◇◇

After that, I somehow made it through the hellish part time work, and met up with captain muscle.

“Huh? Akita is here too?”

“Ou!” “Aah”

“Hmm, then?”

“Ah, Ahh. Can we change the place? To the public park nearby.”

“It’s fine but....”

Is this for real....Am I going to be beaten up by both of them~

That’s harsh—!

“Ko-, Kouyou. How was it with Tachibana recently? Are, are you getting along?”

“Eh? Un, well relatively...”

“I see.....”

Both of you are a little less excited than usual—

Are you depressed?

“We’re here.”

“Ah, aah”

Uwaa—! So finally huh—

“Yo! Kouyou!”

“Eh? Akira? Why?”

For some reason Akira is here too in the park.

Could it be that I, am going to be beaten up by 3 people?

Then what is it? Could it be that they are thanking me for chasing away the former-boyfriend?

When I was thinking about what business they have with me, Akira spoke to me.

“Relax! It isn’t like what you are thinking!”

Then it means they are not here to thank me?

In the end I’m just going to be beaten up—right!

What does relax mean then?

It’s good that they aren’t thanking me—! Is not something to be glad for though.

“Ko, Kouyou”

Captain Muscle and Akita lined up in front of me. Akira was standing behind me.

Ah, am I going to die here?

“I’m sorry!”

“It’s my bad!”

“Heh?”

The two of them did a dogeza in front of me suddenly.

“Hm? What is it?”

“You, you see.....Tachibana’s confession to you was a false one due to a punishment game.....”

“I’m responsible for this too! Even though I say it’s for Tachibana, I didn’t stop it!”

“No, it’s not your fault Taichi! It was Yumekawa’s and my stupid suggestion.....”

“Ah—! So it’s about that!”

“” Eh?””

“No—, I wasn’t planning on eavesdropping but I was walking to the classroom with Akira at the time, and I happened to hear it.”

“Is, is that so.....then why do you accept?”

“Hm—? There was no particular reason though? It wasn’t that I like Koyomi. It’s just that I am a little bit interested in her perhaps? In reality, it’s pretty bothersome though.”

“I, I see.....Then even though you don’t like her, you still protected her?”

“Protect?”

“From that Sakai. You chased him away right?”

“Sakai?”

“Tachibana’s former boyfriend...”

“Aah!.....I’ve been wondering about this for a while but, why does she hate that person so much? Is it because of a trauma? All of that because he had an affair?”

“No, that’s not it.....that.....after Tachibana rejected him, the truth is Sakai was keeping Tachibana so he could have s#x with her.....she almost got raped...at that time it so happened that I and Akira along with Yumekawa helped her, but since then Tachibana has become scared of the opposite sex..... There was a time she shuddered at the mere thought of getting close to someone. If she was touched, she would probably collapse because it was too much, and she fall into depression....”

“Hm? Didn’t you report this to the police?”

“Their parents are pretty close to each other.....Tachibana’s family is a single-mothered one right? Then....it seems like her family is often in the care of theirs....so she didn’t tell her parents and told us to keep it a secret.....Fortunately, Tachibana came home late, so they didn’t find out. We stayed with her at that time and she often had sleepovers you see.....”

“Hmm, and then.....”

“Aah.....Since Akira and I could interact with her without triggering her fear of men, her phobia was cured rather easily by the time we graduated junior high school but.....It seems like she is still afraid of the concept of boyfriends.....And it seems like Kouyou is obedient and harmless, so according to Yumekawa, you might be able to cure her trauma and it seemed like Akira seems to know a lot about you too.....”

“So you got her to do the false confession?”

“Ah, Ahh.....that’s right. I’m sorry! I should have stopped it!”

“.....In the first place, I shouldn’t have planned that!”

“No, I don’t really care about your cover-up.....”

“Uu!.....That’s true.....I’m sorry!”

“Un? For the time being can you stop with the dogeza? It looks tiring.....”

“O, Ok.....”

After I said that, both of them stood up.

“I mean, I’m kind of using Koyomi myself too but why did you suddenly decide to say that?”

“To be honest.....in reality we weren’t planning on telling you that.....but.....”

“Yu, Yumekawa told me. That you guys probably wouldn’t break up in a month.....I don’t know what that meant but.....”

“Aah! I see! If Koyomi really likes me and instead of breaking up, she tells me that she lied to me and confessed once again, since I chased her ex-boyfriend away and all, and due to that, as a man, you thought you should apologize?”

“Eh!?”

“What’s the matter Akira?”

“You, how do you know that Koyomi really fell in love with you?”

“Eh? One would normally notice it right? The feeling is totally different than if she unwillingly go out with me due to a punishment game.....What? Do you think I am dense? I’m a pretty perceptive person you know.....”

“It is exactly as Kouyou said.....”

“I’m sorry!I know I don’t have the right to ask you to do this but.....you don’t particularly like Tachibana right?.....Even so, at the very least....! Please continue dating her until the time period of 1 month ends!”

“Why? I think that would be counterproductive though.....?”

“It’s true that it might hurt her.....but at the very least she can move forward! Yes, the person in question told me... When we got together the other day, she said, “Isn’t it scary if I say that it was a false confession and was rejected? But I might be able to move forward in that case.....And, I still want to be lovers with Kouyou for a little while more””

“I see.....but that’s not all right?”

“Eh?”

“What if I fell in love with Koyomi by that time? Isn’t that what both of you are thinking?”

“Ah, Aaah.....”

“Well, I mentioned it a while ago but, I was also using Koyomi too, I wasn’t particularly planning on cutting it off on my own.....”

“Re-, Really!?.....I’m sorry. Thank you”

“It’s just that, I think it’s better if you don’t expect too much from me falling in love with Koyomi you know?”

“I, I see.....Even so, thank you.....! Hey, what can I do as thanks.....?”

“Let’s see.....if you really insist on thanking me.....then you can treat me once in a cafe next time.....Of course once per person. Then we’re even.”

“If that’s enough then by all means.”

“Aah, if that’s the case then something cheap please.”

“No, No.....stop it you two.....really. This guy is bad news you know?.....Hiehh! ...Ko, Kouyou?.....I’m different right?.....I treated you the other day right?...”

“Un, just half of it.”

“Hiehh!No, stop it.....if you want I’ll properly pay for the other day.....”

“.....Fuuhh.....It’s just a joke...”

“Thank, thank goodness.....”

“Then the two of you, I’ll count on you okay?”

“Ou!” “Aa!”

Yoshh!

I can eat as much parfait as I want, TWICE!!

I’m sure many would misunderstand, but Kouypu is not a dull and cool type of protagonist but rather one that do things on his own pace and annoyingly destroys all of the flags.

Chapter 17

A few days passed since Captain Muscle and Akita did a dogeza. The day after the test was over, I was about to go home since the test in the morning had just ended and school was over by the afternoon.

“Since the test is over, let’s go hang out together—!”

For some reason, Yumekawa proposed that idea.

Well, this is unrelated to me.....

“You should come too Kouyou!”

Akira called out to me.

The flag is triggered too early!

Although I have the confidence that I can break through this situation easily.....

“I have some business I need to attend to today.”

“I’m going to treat you to some crepes!”

“A moment ago it seemed like my schedule was cleared. Shall we go?”

Ah, it was impossible.....

It seems like I can’t recover now.....

“That’s what I’m talking about!”

“So, where are we going?”

“Hm—? An acceptable and safe choice would be karaoke, how about it?”

“Hmm. Isn’t it fine?”

If we go with this large number of people, then I probably won’t have to sing.....

“Well then, let’s go!”

And thus in this way, not Kami7, but Kami8 decided to go to the karaoke.

When we arrived at the karaoke bar, Yumekawa, Akira, and Akita immediately started entering the songs.

As one would expect, I’ve come a long way.....

And shortly after, Koyomi took her seat beside me.

“Thank you for helping me study! I feel like I can solve more questions than normal!”

“It’s fine, it’s not a big deal. You absorbed the materials way better than I thought anyways. I’m glad that I can solve the questions this time too. With this, it would be harder for the teachers to warn me now.”

“Ahaha.....So your policy is still the same...”

“By the way, do you come here often? The karaoke.”

“Un. I always come here with this group. I can’t sing well but, Shizuku is pretty good at it.”

“Hee—, how about Koyomi?”

“Hm—? I don’t think I’m bad...”

“I see.....”

Apparently, Akira has started singing the first song.

Hmm. Well, he is normally good.

And in that way, the person who would like to sing will sing accordingly.

Among them, Akira was a little lower than the rest, and Hirayama and Captain Muscle, who joined the team in the middle, were not bad at anything.

Everyone is good at it as expected.

But.....the songs that Captain Muscle chose is pretty old, huh.

It’s basically filled with the songs from long ago.

It’s too different from his image, which in contrary makes it scary.

Me? I’m enjoying the parfait currently.

And I realized Momoyama is staring at my direction.

“What is it? I won’t give you the parfait, you know?”

“.....That’s not it.....Are you not going to sing?...”

“Nn—,.....I don’t really like singing that much you see. How about you?”

“I don’t really like it either.....”

“But you are good at it right?”

“.....It’s, It’s embarrassing...”

“Heeh—,.....you have a cute personality...”

You are good at it but you have the liberty of not doing so since you are embarrassed. What a luxury to have.

I am in full sarcasm mode.

And immediately,

“Muu—. Are you cheating?”

Uwahh! Koyomi heard it.

“It’s not good to eavesdrop you know.....”

It’s not my place to say it though.

“I ▪ Heard ▪ It! It wasn’t on purpose...!”

No, that’s exactly what you call eavesdropping!

“Sorry, sorry. I’m not cheating.....”

“Eh—....Then how about me?”

“.....What about it?”

“.....Cu, cute?”

Uwahhh—! It’s troublesome to deal with jealousy

Or rather,

“You shouldn’t have said that if you’re going to blush yourself...”

“I’m not blushing! Then! How is it?”

“I think it’s fine though.....?”

“No, not that! Am I cute? Or am I not cute? I don’t think you have told me properly yet!”

Haahh.....This is troublesome.

Yosh! Everyone else is so busy singing that no one is listening, so I guess I’ll tease you a little bit!

I put my hand on her shoulders, and closed the gap between our faces.

“You’re cute.....”

“Guh.....!”

She turned away, her face turning red.

“Ahaha!.....Aren’t you turning red! Like an apple!”

“Shu-, shut up.....I’m not turning red!”

“You don’t even know what you’re talking about!”

“Uu.....”

This is somewhat interesting—.

Un. This reaction is purely cute.

It’s the dream of every high school boy. Lucky—!

“Hey—hey—, it’s about time you sing too Shizuku!”

Yumekawa called out to her.

“Ihh.....”

“No, no. You should sing!”

Everyone started to urge her to sing.

Hmm, is her singing that good.....

“Then.....Just one song.....”

“UnUn! That’s fine!”

Then Shizuku started entering a song.

It’s a song that is popular recently.

She began singing.

.....She’s good.

She is simply good. She is simply good. Her clear voice penetrated my heart and ran through my body like it's flowing through my blood vessels.

The atmosphere of the place was already like a singer's solo stage, and it was as if a spotlight was shining on Momoyama, and everyone forgot to even praise her, their eyes glued to her.

You're right, it would be embarrassing to be stared at like this...

When the song ended, the crowd erupted in applause.

The scores are like nothing I've ever seen before, something that would only usually be on a singing show.

She comes back to us shyly.

"That's amazing. I'm surprised you did so well."

".....Th, thanks."

I'm honestly impressed.

"Since Shizuku just sang, how about you sing too, Kouyou!"

"What are you talking about? You've been singing all day."

I look downwards, and shook my head bewilderedly.

"No, you liar. What, did you think you can fool me?"

"I know, right—!"

So it's no good huh!

"All right....."

"You were always listening to music, so it wasn't as if you weren't interested right?"

"Well yeah, it's not as if I was embarrassed, it's just that I don't like to gather unneeded attention since it's troublesome."

For the time being, I'll enter the song that I usually listen to, and clutch the mike.

Good grief.....I really don't want to do this.

Because everyone's mouths are going to be left hanging open!!

I start to sing with everyone's attention.

Everyone looked at me with a surprised face.

Subconsciously.

They don't seem to realize that they're listening to something incredible or artistic

I can't keep my mouth shut.

And like that, the song ended.

That's right! I didn't want to sing too much because I'm a good singer, even better than Momoyama, and I'd get a lot of attention in that case.

"Kouyou, you.....you're too bad at thissss!"

"I've never seen a score in the 50's when someone sings seriously!"

"I'm crying because I pity you."

"Umu, Well, life isn't all about songs....."

"Are, are you okay.....?"

".....Bad....."

Did you think it was going to be good?

This is reality.

I know the first two.

Oi.

Why are you shedding tears of pity in the second half!

I know that songs aren't everything.....!

It's okay.....what do you mean by that! And what do you mean by the question mark in the end? And don't say it while losing confidence in the middle!

And Momoyama!

Didn't you just say you're not good at it in a serious tone!

And with a straight face! At least smile!

“.....I, I think..... it's good.....”

Koyomiii!

Don't be so coy! Don't patronize me just because I'm your boyfriend! You're hurting my feelings!

Is that it? What's that? Payback for teasing me earlier? You should've doubled it!

Huh, I'm so hurt.

I think I'm going to become a okama now... I'm going to be free of all restrictions and enjoy life like a naked man.

“.....Can I go home now?”

“I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry! You don't have to sing anymore! I'll buy you a parfait!”

“I'll stay a little longer.”

After that, I ate a parfait while silently listening to everyone sing.

Koyomi has been encouraging me from time to time, and it's pretty much tearing my heart to shreds.

Chapter 18

(Koyomi's POV)

The time now is 10pm at night.

Since Kouyou said he was going to rest 1 hour ago, he hasn't been replying at all to the LINE messages.

I confessed my feelings on Tuesday, so next Friday is exactly the 30th day.

So Saturday tomorrow is exactly 1 week after.

I talked about everything. About the fact that the false confession was caused by the punishment game, that I really liked him now, that I really wanted to become lovers with him for real this time, to let me stay by his side as his real girlfriend.

Even though I told a lie, I know that I don't deserve to ask for this.

.....But, I love him.

I've hopelessly fell in love with him.

The other day, I know that what he said to Shizuku was just a sarcasm. But even so, I can't stand it. It's fine if it's just sarcasm, I want him to say it to me.

Kouyou made an incredibly annoyed look but he somehow said it. I'm sure he was just making fun of me. But I was just so happy that I feel like it's out of this world.

And for this reason, I was scared but I am prepared to be rejected.

If I was rejected, Kouyou probably won't ever talk to me anymore because of his personality. We would probably immediately become strangers once again.

Even so, I want to say it.

I thought so from the bottom of my heart.

But, to be frank I don't have much confidence.

I'm just guessing but, during the time I confessed to Kouyou, I'm sure that he wasn't in love with me. No, that might still be the case even now.

I don't know why a person like Kouyou would accept a confession from a person that he didn't like even though it's troublesome.

That's why, I don't have any confidence. I'm sure I would be rejected.

That's probably true.

That's why, I'm going to make you fall in love with me during this week. I'm going to make you fall in love with me so much you wouldn't be able to stay apart from me.

Recently Kouyou seemed to have more fun while smiling when he was talking to me.

There is a chance.

I'm going to appeal to him as much as I can during this one week.

And for that reason, I somehow managed to force Kouyou to go on a date with me on Sunday.

Currently, I am in the middle of getting some advice from a friend of mine in RINE who usually helps me.

『Where should I go tomorrow?』

『Speaking from the point of view from a young man, shopping that might become a burden is out. And I think normally a date should be fun, but Kouyou's personality will make it seem like it's troublesome for him.』

『Then, should I go to a safe choice like an amusement park?.....But waiting can be unpleasant.』

『No, he actually can wait for the things that he like you know? Although, I don't know if Kouyou likes the amusement park.』

『A man sure enough likes the dojo right!?』

『The muscle should shut up a little.』

『Hmm—. What should I do—』

『Hmm—, the place that Kouyou could enjoy, I couldn't think anything but a cafe.』

『For a whole day? That is.....』

『Isn't an amusement park okay as expected? He seems like he likes this kind of stuff.』

『Well, that would be a safe choice.』

『Okay. Then I'll just do that!』

『Do your best! He doesn't really like to wait so it would be better if you come to the meeting point earlier!』

『Oh and, we're going to go shopping for the clothes for your date tomorrow!』

『Un ! Thank you everyone ! 』

Haah.....I wonder if he will have fun...

No, it should be fine!

Even if that's not the case, I will make sure he have fun!

I'm going to talk with him so proactively he wouldn't have time to spare!

I'm definitely going to make this a success!

◇◇◇◇◇

9 am in the morning, meeting up at the station.

Since he rejected my box lunch before, I didn't bring any this time.

Perhaps, he likes his own cooking the most.

I arrived at the station half an hour ago.

And I headed to the place where we decided we would meet.

Is this too fast? I thought, but the sooner the better I guess.

When I arrived at the meeting place, something unbelievable is reflected in my eyes.

Somehow Kouyou has arrived faster than me.

I rushed over and called out to him.

“I'm sorry for being late!”

“There's still 30 minutes left, you don't have to worry about it. I was just looking forward to it and couldn't wait.”

———My mind turned blank.....

Chapter 19

Sunday

Since Koyomi was so annoying when she requested that we go on a date, I had no choice but to accept it.

In any case, I was reluctant to go at first thinking that I would have to carry her luggage, but to my surprise, it seems like we are going to an amusement park. To be honest, I'm really looking forward to it, since I've never been there before.

I just couldn't wait for it, and before I knew it I came one hour early.

And because of that, I said that kind of thing unintentionally.

“Oi—! Koyomi—!”

I waved my hands in front of me and there were no responses at all.

It seems like she was so happy to the point where she was in a daze when I told her that I couldn't wait for today's date and the fact that I had come earlier.

Hmm—, I wasn't saying that with that intention in mind though.....Well I guess it's for her sake if I didn't say anything...

“Oi—!”

“Eh?.....Ha!.....”

She was indeed feeling sluggish, so I pinched her cheeks.

“Hav-, have you woken up?”

“Eh?Un.....Hah!Yo-, your hand.....Ha.....”

It seems like she noticed the hand that was touching her cheek and went somewhere once again.....

“.....That's enough!”

“Ouch!”

I was chopped in the head.

Hmm, I won't say too much from now on, I won't do it, let's go with that.

“Well, since we're already here, let's go already.”

“Yo-, you are right.....Ah! Be-, before that.....”

“Hmm?”

When I was about to walk, I stopped since she called out.

“How is this shirt?.....I bought it yesterday....”

“.....Umm, let's see...”

Even though I just decided not to say too much.

On top, she wore a white shirt and a light brown coat, which she wrapped around her wrists. Under that were denim shorts and black tights. In addition, she is wearing a black short boots.

Un. I think she is purely cute.

But, it's a pain if she went off somewhere again.

“Un.....I think it fits you very well...?”

“That's not what I meant!.....”

“Hahh.....To be honest, I think you are very cute.”

“Uu.....!”

Her face turned beet red and she turned her face away.

“No, like I say.....If you are embarrassed then you don't have to make me say it.”

“I'm not embarrassed!”

“Even though your face is flushed and you are grinning? “

“My face isn't red, and I wasn't grinning!”

“No, your face right now gives me a bad feeling you know?”

“Sh, Shut up!”

“Haa.....I get it...Can we go now.....?”

“U, Un”

And like that, the date on our day off begins.

“Hey, hey! Where should we go first!?”

“I don't know. I've only been to an amusement park once a long time ago, so I don't know what kind of entertainment they provide.”

Having managed to somehow return to normal, Koyomi arrived at the amusement park and was excited.

“Eh! Is that so.....could it be that you hate it...?”

“Ah—no, that's not it. It's just that I haven't got any opportunities to go there. As expected, I don't think I'll go alone anymore.....It is very fun, thank you.”

“I, I see!.....That's a relief!”

“Un, that’s why it would be nice if Koyomi could take me to the places she liked? Since I don’t really know about these stuff.....”

“U, Un! I’ll give it my best!” That’s it!

“Th, Thank you.”

“Un! Then....first is.....there!”

As she said that while pointing her fingers, it was a roller coaster.

“If we are talking about this amusement park, that one is still kind. Let’s get your heart used to that first!”

“I got it. Then let’s go immediately.”

“Un!”

Un. As expected, since it’s a day off, it was pretty crowded.

There were about 40 people waiting in line.

“This is a relatively tender place but it’s pretty popular...Even though the park just opened, so everyone is thinking the same thing huh...”

“It can’t be helped.....”

Roller coaster, huh. The one in front of me is pretty small, but I’ve never rode a roller coaster before.

I’m looking forward to this....my heart is thumping.

“And lining up like this makes your heart thump huh.”

“Huh?”

Ah, I did it.....

Koyomi will definitely misunderstand that sentence.

And she went somewhere else again.

In the end, she came back just before the ride.....

“Yo, Yosh! Let’s ride it!”

“Un.....”

According to the rumours, roller coasters are apparently very scary.

No matter how much she says it's tender, I don't know if I could bear it during my first time.

If we say just by the results, it's pretty fun.

But I feel like something is missing.

I don't think it was particularly scary but.

She was squealing beside me and it looked like she was having fun.

U—n? Is this how it is?

“Where should we go next?”

“Nn—, you seem surprisingly calm?”

“Well.”

“Then, let's go ride something that is more frightening! That one is pretty popular, so I think it'll be about lunch time when we are done!”

“I see.....Then, I count on you to guide me.”

“Un! Leave it to me!”

That really seemed like it'll be fun.

And with less than a week to go, is it okay to make some memories?

For the time being, I'll enjoy it too.

Chapter 20

The second half of the date

“Hey—, can you do ahh to me?”

“Eh, I definitely don't want to though.”

We came to a food court in the amusement park for lunch.

Tachibana ordered an omurice, while I ordered udon noodles with meat.

Well, if you ask me why I chose udon noodles with meat, I don't particularly have any reason. To avoid this kind of situation is also one reason. This situation that asked me to feed her with an "Ahh".

That's because you can't do that with noodles, you see!

"Eh—, isn't it fine!"

"I would understand if you wanted a mouthful, or asking me to feed you with an "Ahh", but isn't that your omurice? You can eat it yourself."

Oh my God! This is perfect!

I'm completely safe now.

"No, you see. Because that's just an excuse to get you to feed me with an "Ahh" or "Ahn". The truly important thing is the act of feeding me itself."

Yes, I know—

"All right, okay. I got it.....Here, Ahnn"

I took away the spoon, scooped out a spoonful of omurice, and presented it to Koyomi.

"Guh.....!.....A, Ahn."

While she was turning red, she looked very happy eating the omurice.

"Th, Then.....He, here....."

Koyomi also scooped out a spoonful of omurice, and brought it in front of me.

It seems like she wants me to eat it.

"I told you already.....If you are embarrassed then you shouldn't"

"Sh, shut up!Eat it quickly.....!"

"Yes yes....."

For the time being I put the spoon on my mouth, and tasted the omurice. Un, this is delicious.

"Come to think of it, this is an indirect kiss.....is it okay?"

"In, In-in-indirect kiss!?I don't know what you're talking about!.....Of course I'm fine, I'm fine!"

“.....Your way of speaking is weird you know?”

For the time being, since I won't like it when my udon cools down, I'll eat it silently.

Koyomi didn't come back for a while.

“Un, that was very delicious!”

“Yeah.”

“Then, since we had our break, let's go somewhere!”

“Un. Where are we going?”

“Hmm—, since we just ate, we shouldn't do anything too intense—”

“You're right, is there something easygoing?”

“Hmm—,.....how about the merry-go-round?”

“Aah, the horse one.....that's okay I think?”

“Yosh! Let's go immediately since we've already decided!”

“Yes yes”

And like that, we go to the merry-go-round.

Since there were only small kids and lovers, we could ride it easily since it was empty.

But, the pace is quite slow, so it's not really fun.

“Ahahaha!Even though we've grown up, it's fun to ride it together huh!”

“Th, that's right.....”

Really.....

I don't think this has anything to do with who you are riding with though?

This is only fun for kids only right.....

“Where should we go next!”

When Koyomi was browsing the pamphlet, one of the stores caught my eye.

Cre-, a crepe shop!?

“The time for afternoon snacks is pretty close, so why don’t we go eat some crepes?”

“Eh?Ahaha.....You really like crepes huh—”

“Well yeah, let’s go quickly.”

“Eh!.....Wait,why is it only at times like this that you move so quickly—!”

She said something behind me but I couldn’t hear it. I turn towards the crepe shop, and walked faster.

We arrived at a so-called sales car, and there was quite a line of people waiting to get in, probably because it was so popular.

“Hey—hey—, won’t you feed me with an “Ahn” again?”

“I won’t give you mine, but if it’s Koyomi’s then it’s fine.”

“As usual, you won’t give yours.....”

“Haahh.....Then do you want to buy a separate one for that?”

“Eh? Is it fine?!.....I want to buy it!”

“Okay, then go take a seat first.”

“U, Un! Thank you!”

◇◇◇◇◇

There weren’t any particularly important events that happened after that, and time passes us by.

Perhaps she was too scared, but Koyomi stubbornly refused to enter the haunted house.

When it’s about time to go home and I was about to prepare to head home.....

“Hey! Let’s ride the standard classic for a date, the Ferris wheel!”

“Well, it’s fine I guess...”

“Oh—! It’s rising even higher!”

“.....The scenery is unexpectedly beautiful”

“Hey, can I sit next to you?”

I am currently sitting across Koyomi.

There wasn’t any particular reasons for me to refuse, and there’s enough space for two people,

I said, “Go ahead” and Koyomi moved and sat down next to me.

“.....Thank you.....the first date today on our day off, it’s very fun...”

After a moment of silence, Koyomi muttered that

“Me too, it was fun”

“Is that so?.....So it was fun....”

“.....What’s the matter?”

“.....It’s going to be one month since we started dating in 5 days.”

“You’re right...”

Aah, so it’s about that.....

It must be scary from Koyomi’s side.

Because this might be the last date that we have...

And like this, the day that we spent playing all day will end now.

Suddenly, when I looked to my side, I saw there were a few tears.

“Can you..... hug me.....for a while.....?”

“.....Nn, go ahead...”

I spread my arms out, and assumed a pose to accept her.

Then she rested her chin on my shoulder and hugged me.

I returned her hug.

Her body is much thinner and slimmer than I thought it would be...

She shuddered slightly, and I heard a faint cry after that.

I'm sure it's my own fault for not trying to do more.

"What's the matter?"

Even though I knew, I still asked.

I asked that with the most tender voice I could give.

"Uun. It's nothing.....I just had too much fun....."

"I see....."

I just said that, and separated our body. After she wiped off her tears, she tell me with a smile.

"Let's go on a date too next time!"

She had a beautiful, gentle, and somewhat fragile smile that would surely make many men fall in love with her.

It wasn't a suggestion or a promise.

Those words were her determination, her hopes.

And that's why I couldn't reply to her words and could only smile.

On the ride home, she was probably too excited, or maybe she was just so tired that she rested her head on my shoulder and dozed off.

Her face was covered with tears from her eyes, and she was muttering in her sleep.

"...I.....love Kouyou.....I don't want.....to.....break up"

It was something that she didn't tell me until the very end.

Aah, Koyomi must have realized it.....

That I wasn't in love with her...

I thought of what I should do.

.....I'll do the same in the end.

When I saw Koyomi in her casual clothes, when she arched her neck, when she smiled at me on the Ferris wheel, and this sad-looking sleeping face.

I thought she was cute.

But that's all.

It wasn't a feeling of love or anything.

No, that's wrong.

The truth is, I do have some feelings for her,

But I don't have the slightest desire to have that kind of relationship with Koyomi.

I looked at Koyomi's face.

Why, why is it me.....

If....If she confessed to another person.....

Then she probably won't have to be hurt right?

For a while, I regretted accepting that confession at the time.

If only I had rejected her at the time.....

It can't be helped. This feelings of mine,

The only thing I can do is reject Koyomi so that I hurt her as little as possible and I should just put up with it for another 5 days.....

———And we went home uneventfully after that.

Chapter 21

"Haahh....."

"What's the matter~? Sen-pai."

It's Monday, school was over and I was currently at my part-time job.

Today Koyomi was very aggressive and therefore I was really tired. I could have refused to talk to her like I usually do, but I felt sorry for her and so I tried talking to her.

In addition, this Friday is going to be a problem for me.

“No, you see—, I have to reject her on Friday.....and I was worrying about that.....”

“Oh no! Kouyou-chan is going to be free!? I hope you don’t mind if I eat you!”

“You, so you were here.....”

“Eh—! You’re such an asshole for dumping a girl~”

“There’s nothing particularly wrong with rejecting a girl right?”

“You’re at fault sen-pai.”

“Uwahr—That’s unreasonable....By the way, how do you reject someone so they are hurt as little as possible?”

“You are talking about the person who falsely confessed to you right? Why Senpai?”

“You’re too naive, Rumi-chan! That’s because that girl have truly fallen in love with Kouyou! Kouyou-chan is cool after all! And I’m sure she’ll confess again by the time one month passes, so Kouyou is currently lost about that!?”

“How did you know?”

“Muscles speak louder than words!”

“As expected of your insight(LOL)”

“Eh~, Isn’t it fine if you keep on dating her~”

“What do you mean by (LOL)!?”

“Even if you say that, I’m not in love with her you see...”

“I was ignored again!”

“If that’s the case, why don’t you just go right ahead? It’s their fault in the first place, isn’t it?”

“No, I do have some feelings for her....If possible I’d like to hurt her as little as possible.....”

“Am I useless now!?”

“And, is that different from love?”

“It’s different, this emotion of mine.”

“That’s a tough one~”

“No, I really don’t know what to do anymore.....”

“You should do what you think is right according to your feelings, and if it wasn’t good enough, you should just tell her how you’ve felt in the past month that you’ve been together with her?”

“Manager.....”

“Manager~.....”

“Kenji-chan.....”

“” ” Gross””””

“Why!?”

“You see~ It’s impossible~it’s impossible to say it that honestly—”

“Kenji-chan! You should just go home for today! You’re definitely sick! Saying upright things, it’s making the people around you feel grossed out!”

“.....”

“Why! Even I would say something decent for once! I’ll at least play the role of an adult who’s always being teased, but suddenly turns serious when the situation calls for it, , helps children in distress, and is actually surprisingly popular!”

“That’s impossible for the manager. Just give up.”

“In the first place, what about your job~?”

“Hey, Rumi-chan! He is probably bored that no customers are coming! You shouldn’t ask that question! That’s a stupid question!”

“Nene-san, you ended up saying it on your own. You’re sticking a knife where it hurts.Haahh, I’ll be silent.....”

“Well, setting aside Kenji-chan for now, that’s not a bad idea, what do you think Kouyou-chan!?”

“How do I feel during this past month, huh.....”

“I——”

——The next day

Tuesday

“Fuahhh.....”

“Yo! You skipped an entire hour!”

“Good morning Akira, the first hour is physics right? I got full mark during the test so he shouldn’t have any complaints...”

“Ah! Good morning, Kouyou!”

“Good morning, Koyomi.....”

“Un! Today, won’t you go on a date with me!?”

“Well it’s fine I guess.....”

I was invited to a date by Koyomi. I don’t have any reason in particular to reject it, so there’s no problem.....

“Ah—, then is it okay if I accompany you both too?”

The one who uttered those words was Yumekawa.

“I’m fine with it but.....you should ask Koyomi...”

“Eh, I’m fine with it too.....”

“Okay, thank you~. Have you decided where we’re going?”

“Nn—, we haven’t decided it yet—”

“I see. Then do you want to go to a karaoke with everyone again?”

“Stop it, for real.”

“It’s just a joke—, we don’t have enough time for that anyways. But I do have a place that I wanted to go to—”

“Hee—Where is it?”

“The family restaurant where Kouyou works at.”

“Stop it. Seriously.”

“But this is not a joke though—. Koyomi want to go there too right?”

“Un!.....Kouyou, can’t I?”

Koyomi asked me with sparkling eyes and daintily turned her head.

U—n. This is quite a mellow look.

“.....Haahh.....It’s fine I guess.....”

“Hooray—!”

Uu.....

If I’m not mistaken, Rumi-chan and Nene-san is on shift today.....

I have a bad feeling about this.....

Chapter 22

“Morning—”

“Oh—! Kouyou-kun!.....Hmm?”

“Do you have a shift today?”

“Could it be that you come to meet me!?”

“That’s not it. An acquaintance said that they wanted to come..... ”

As soon as I said that, the door of the family restaurant opened, and the people of Kami7 entered and looked around inside.

“” ” Ohh—!”””

“So Kouyou works here, huh—”

“Oh, is that the Kami7 Kouyou-chan was talking about?”

”Un”

“Wow, that’s certainly a beautiful man and woman you have in your group. I feel so sorry for senpai who is with them.”

“Oh, Kouyou-chan, you’re just barely handsome if you take off your glasses and do your hair right!”

“Eh—! Is that true—!”

“So the pretty girl over there is Kouyou-chan’s girlfriend?”

“Well yeah”

“Then, can I tease her a little bit?”

“Of course not.”

“Do you mind if I go say hello to her then?”

“Manager, I know you’re happy to have customers, but please don’t come out.”

“Well, when Kenji-chan appears, the impression is

“Hahaha that’s creepy!”

“Aren’t you more harsh to me recently?”

“Kouyou! Don’t be like that, you should sit down too!”

Akira called out to me.

Well, I came as a customer today after all.....

“Then.....”

I greeted Rumi and the others and took my seat.

“You guys seem to be getting along. I thought you were gloomy and lonely at your work.”

“That’s rude, Akira. I’m a part-timer, and I can’t touch my phone, so the only way to kill time is to talk.”

“I see, I see—”

“What would you like to order?”

Then Rumi came to take the order.

Yumekawa and Hirayama were the first to respond

“” Cute—!””

“What’s your name!?”

“Hayama Rumi—”

“Hey, are we in the same grade!?”

“No, I’m a year younger~”

“You never told me you had such a cute junior at your part-time job!”

Akira asked me a question.

“I don’t have to tell you, do I?”

“If you don’t mind, I’d like to know which high school you go to!”

Oh my god, Akita asked about Rumi’s high school!

Don’t do it. She’s too much for you.

“Are you hitting on me?”

“Ugh well, something like that”

“Hahaha It’s impossible..... You’re not my type – I refuse.”

“Eh.....”

“Hmm, that’s really creepy.”

“Hih.....”

See.....?

Rumi-chan hates being hit on.

I recall her causing some kind of havoc back when she went to the beach in the past.

What does that have to do with picking up girls? I think so too, but she doesn’t like it because it sounds the same.

“Besides, I have a boyfriend.”

“Oh, I see.”

He’s seriously depressed.....

I mean, that’s news to me.

“Senpai is my boyfriend!”

“” !?””

Hmm? That’s even more novel to me, huh?

“What are you talking about? Junior-chan. Kouyou is my boyfriend, you know.?”

“What? It’s been a year already though?”

“That’s..... a lie.....!”

“Rumi? I don’t know anything about that though?”

“She called her chan!”

“You’re saying you forgot!?”

“Nene-san! Please do something about Rumi”

“Oh, no! What are you talking about, Rumi! Rumi isn’t Kouyou’s girlfriend! Don’t worry, Ms. Girlfriend!”

“Ahh, is that the case.....I’m relieved.....”

Nice follow-up! Nene-san!

That’s the Okama Master for you!

“Kouyou’s favorite is, me ”

I retract my previous statement.

What Okama Master?

“Um, that’s enough....”

“Kouyou-kun’s favorite is me!”

.....

“Manager, would you like to die once?”

“I’m not in the mood for that right now. Get out of the way, you damned manager.”

“Kenji-chan.....do you want to go to a hospital?”

“” U, uwahh.....””

Even the Kami7 distanced themselves.

“Gu, guhh.....!.....Why is it just meeeeeee!”

“Yes, I’ll go to the manager, Rumi-chan, take care of the order!”

“Okay~”

Thus, the manager was taken away, and Rumi took her order maturely.

I ordered some pasta at random, and as I was eating I got thirsty, so I went to pour myself a drink at the drink bar.

“Hey, hey.....”

“Whoa! That startled me. What’s wrong?”

Before I knew it, there was Koyomi next to me, staring at me.

“Is, is it true?”

“What is?”

“Are you sure there’s nothing between you and that junior?”

“Do I look that shrewd to you?”

“That’s not it, but I had a feeling you were somewhat used to women, and she’s cute to boot.....”

“Relax, there’s really nothing.”

“I see.....I’m sorry for asking a question like that.”

“It’s okay.....you don’t have to worry about it.”

“Thank you”

“Yeah. Let’s go back, shall we?”

“Yeah!”

Nene-san tried to get involved several times, but I chased her away and managed to finish the date with God 7.

And now I’m at the park nearby, where they got down on their knees just the other day.

Everyone with the exception of Koyomi from Kami7

“Kouyou.....just the day before yesterday, I talked with Akita and the others.....”

“Aah, is that so.....”

“I’m very sorry!”

Yumekawa bowed her head.

And the others bowed their head after that too.

“No, it’s fine. I heard the basic outlines of the story anyways, and getting treated to parfaits is already good enough for me. Raise your head. I have something I need to apologize for too.....”

“I, i see.....Hey, can I ask one thing?”

“About Koyomi, I didn’t have a change of heart...I’m still planning on rejecting her.....”

“I see.....Is it because of the false confession?”

“No, that’s not it. It’s just that I, I don’t feel that way towards Koyomi.”

“I.....see.....”

“I’m sorry.....”

“No, it’s our fault too.....I know I don’t have any right to say this but.....”

“Nn?”

“I would like you to.....reject her as gently as possible if possible. I know that you have no interest in Koyomi. But.....please face Koyomi’s confession

properly.....even though it all starts from that punishment game....her feelings are real at the very least.”

“I know.....don’t worry. I have already decided what my reply is to Koyomi. I’m going to give it everything I’ve got.”

“Thank you.....You really are a good guy....it’s just like Akira said...”

“Right? This guy is a good person—!”

“You’re pretty much the same.”

“Can we still invite you to play sometimes? Together with Koyomi....She, she is not the type to like giving up...”

“I’ll look forward to it if I have some spare time.”

“That’s something you don’t usually have though.”

“.....How do you know?”

“How many years do you think I’ve been your friend?”

“I just met you this year. It has not even been that long yet.”

“Then, I’m going home too.....I’m counting on you for the confession.....”

“Yeah, I know.....”

Thus, everyone except Akira and I left.

“Hey, are you impotent?”

“I’ll kill you.”

“But! If someone usually dates Koyomi for 1 month, they will usually fall in love with her!”

“I do have some feelings for her, you know....”

“I, I see.....I’m relieved”

“Do you really want me to kill you?”

“I’m sorry, sorry alright! It’s just a joke.....Hey, are you really not angry at Yumekawa and the others?”

“About the punishment game? I’m not angry at them for that, really. They might go around doing it in the wrong way but I understand that it’s all for their friend, they even bowed their heads for their friends earlier. Because Koyomi has a lot of things going on in her past, because she trusted someone blindly, at the root she’s just a normal nice person right?.....To use someone for the sake of their friends, it’s not an uncommon story.”

“That’s a relief...Hey, what am I to you?”

“What is it so suddenly, it grosses me out.”

“But! “You don’t have to force yourself to me” is what you said to me before!”

“Is that your attempt at mimicry? It doesn’t sound alike at all.”

“Shut up!.....Am I just the friend of a girl who falsely confessed to you?”

“.....That might be the case for those 5.....But at the very least, I regard you as a friend.”

“Thank, thank goodness.....Nn? So I’m actually a great person who made you say that which even Koyomi can’t?”

“That’s not really the case though. And, if you say that, it only took me one week to get used to the people at work.”

“You see, you can’t compare me to someone like them..... who has such a strong character.”

“Hmm. Well even so, the one that I got along with the most is you after all.”

“Ohh! Tsundere?”

“Haahh.....yeah, yeah.”

“Ahaa!.....Let us go play together next time!”

“If I feel like it.”

“Fufu, just like always!Well then! See you tomorrow!”

“Un, goodbye”

Chapter 23

[Koyomi’s POV]

One week. For this one week, I intended to do everything in my power.

I appealed to him as much as I could while thinking about when to pull back at the same time.

As expected, today I can't go on a date because of what I have to do tomorrow.

But still, I don't feel confident.

I was prepared. I said such a thing but the truth is that I'm still not sure whether I should tell him. If I told him about the fake confession, Kouyou might stop going out with me.

Even still, I should do this. One factor is the fact that I lied to him, and more than that I actually wanted to be a real couple with him.

Up until the end, I know I'm selfish.

But, I just can't stop.

That's why today, when I go back home I planned on crying a lot. So that I could stop my tears when I was rejected tomorrow. So that I could smile.

Aah, Sunday was really fun.

It was my first date on a day off.

Kouyou also enjoyed himself, and I managed to make him feed me with an "Ahn" or "Ahh".

And that's why, I regretted crying on the Ferris wheel. It's because it makes the happy memories we just experienced into sad ones.

Let's come again! When I said that, he smiled. I was happy. That was closer to a hope than a promise to me. That's why I was happy.

But he didn't give a reply.

I don't know whether that was intentional or just a coincidence.

No, I shouldn't think about this

I also managed to talk to him a lot during this week.

I'm glad that he didn't try to refuse talking to me.

.....But somehow, I feel like this is the end. When I think about it that way, I begin to feel uneasy.

It was fun when we went to visit the shop where he worked part-time.

I was nervous when his cute junior came out, and when she told me that Kouyou is her boyfriend, I felt like crying.

Everyone seemed nice.

The manager was.....I don't really know.

Anyways, I have done what I could.

The rest depends on tomorrow, I just have to tell Kouyou to stay after school.

I wasn't planning on talking to Kouyou tomorrow. If I do, I feel like my resolve will falter.

That's why today, I was planning on telling Kouyou to stay in the classroom after class.

When I arrived at the classroom, I found Kouyou there. As soon as I tried to enter, I heard the girls talking about me.

It wasn't about a good topic.

I don't really paid any attention to them. I've been told a few times that these guys are jealous. I don't care about that now.

But it was kind of hard to get in the classroom, so I stayed there. The girl even started to involve Kouyou in this, and I started to complain.

◇◇◇◇◇

[Kouyou's POV]

After school, I was told by Koyomi that a teacher called me.

It's probably about the matter tomorrow.

I'm bored so I tried talking to Akira(only responding with gestures and short replies).

And I heard the voice of a few female classmate's talking

"That Koyomi—, she's getting carried away just because she's a little cute."

"Yeah! She even rejected the confession of a third-year student."

“She says she’s not good with men, but she’s always hanging out with her male friends, and the other day she suddenly started having a boyfriend.”

“And she did it voluntarily.”

“Eh, really?.....How is she bad with them.”

Aah, I see.....

This is the so-called gossips of the unpopular bunch.

A bunch of people have said that to me before, but I basically ignored them.

Did she ever do anything to you guys.....

That’s tough....

Well she is probably used to getting talked behind on. And backstabbing is something that doesn’t really hurt a person directly as long as you doesn’t say it in front of the person in question, so as long as the ones being gossiped didn’t hear it, it’s fine.

If I were to pay a little bit of attention, the one who is at fault here is completely me.

Everyone has one or two thousand people that they don’t like, and of course they vent it by talking behind their backs. It’s useless to try to control these types of things.

But still, you don’t have to say that in the classroom. I’m sure they have a lot of things to deal with so let’s be generous and forgive them.

Well if the person that was gossiped heard it, then they will immediately stop.

“Kouyou, are you sure you don’t want to stop it?”

“Isn’t it fine? The person in question wasn’t listening. And these girls probably have a lot of things going on, probably. You too have talked behind someone’s back right? At the very least, I ever did. In fact, you aren’t stopping them?”

“If you, the boyfriend, leave it alone. I won’t do anything too.”

“Is that so.It’s just, Koyomi is going to come soon, I guess I should stop them...”

“Oh! Tsundere!”

Akira teased me, so I glared at him and then called out to the girls.

“Excuse me!”

“Nn?”

“Koyomi is about to come soon, so I think it’s better for you to stop now.”

“Oh? It’s Koyomi’s boyfriend! So you were still here!”

“Ah—, hey-hey! How was it honestly?”

“What are you talking about?”

“Isn’t Koyomi troublesome?”

I retract my previous statement.

This is completely their fault. No matter how much, even as a joke, trying to ask her boyfriend about this is OUT.

And you know what? Right? What ?

What do you have to be so sure of that?

Is that it? Are you guys Koyomi’s ex-boyfriends?

Well, she is certainly troublesome but.....

“.....What do you mean?”

“No, she is bad with guys after all~she said, pretending to be innocent, but then suddenly she tells him off and gets herself a boyfriend. Isn’t she a b#tch! ”

“Yeah! You honestly think she’s annoying right?”

“Or is it that? Are you fine with anyone as long as she is cute? Give it up, she’s just deceiving you.”

If you’re jealous of her looks, you’re the one who’s deceiving yourself.

I thought that but, I don’t really want to incite a fight.

I’ll handle this gently

“In the first place, you look obedient, but when Koyomi confesses to you you are all over the moon.....”

.....!

It's still fine if you talk about Koyomi.

But you can't do that to me, right. I'm right here listening after all

In the first place, you know nothing about Koyomi. It's not your place to badmouth her.

Well, I don't know either so I don't have any duty to stop you!

I thought there was a lot to it, but there isn't. Nothing at all. All it was were just plain jealousy.

"That, did you tell that to the person in question?"

"What? It's the truth after all."

"What's wrong with that? Isn't it true she's pretty?"

"Haah? Look here..."

"You're just jealous in the first place right?"

"We are just doing this for you.....!"

"Then let me tell you something for your sake. Just because you aren't popular doesn't mean that you should be jealous. Isn't it better if you stop?"

"It's not like we're not popular! In the first place, if only my face was better!"

"Aah, yeah. You are ugly after all. So pitiful.....is this what you meant by being deceived by appearance? But wellm you have a bad personality too, so it can't be helped that you aren't popular right..."

"Uugh.....!"

"In the first place, are you guys even trying?.....For example you. You're fat. I can hear things even if I don't want to. You were always talking about sweets and drinks all the time and anyone can see clearly that your lunch box is bigger than most people?"

"Wha, what is it! Is it bad to eat what I want to!?"

"No, not at all. In fact I think it's a great thing. To be able to enjoy what you want. I think it's a good way to live, it deserves respect. It's just that, if you choose

to go down that path, you have to have the resolve to throw everything else away. If you don't want to be called fat, then you can always exercise right? At the very least, Koyomi usually doesn't eat more than she needs to. She resists the temptation of eating what she wants and she also exercises. Before complaining about your faces, how about fixing your attitude first?"

"Bu-, but...in the end she just pretends to be pure-hearted"

"Isn't that fine? Even so. I don't really mind it though, those kinds of minor details. Let's go, Akira."

"Nn? Ah right!"

As I was leaving the classroom, I turned around, looked at the girls, and said a few words.

"I think it's much easier to find the bad things about yourself than it is to find fault in others. If you noticed it, then why don't you do something about it?"

"Hahaha!.....You guys, you shouldn't make Kouyou your enemy~"

"Akira, you're noisy...."

"Ueehhh!"

And like that we went out the classroom, and I feel like I saw something moving when I looked to the side.

It was Koyomi.....

.....Oh My God!

So she heard that!

◇◇◇◇◇

[Koyomi's POV]

I was very happy. I was glad that Kouyou defended me again.

Kouyou is about to leave the classroom.
I move away for now and hide.

Kouyou walked to my direction. I couldn't hold back and hugged him.

The moment I hugged him, my tears overflowed.

Kouyou was surprised for a moment, but when he recognized me, he gently hugged me back and patted my head.

It's the same as that day.....

Aa, more, more, more.....! I wanted him to do more, but at the same time, I wanted him to stop. If you are that kind to me, I wouldn't want to separate from you. My resolve will waver then.

But my body naturally didn't want to separate.

I'm sure the tears I have right now are not from the sadness of being complained about by my classmates, nor from the happiness of being protected by Momiji, but from the fear that our time together like this will end today.

——I couldn't stop my tears for a while.

Chapter 24

『Tomorrow, I have something I need to discuss with you, so can you wait for me at the classroom for 30 minutes?』

Yesterday, after crying for quite a while, Koyomi said so and left.

This 30 minutes is probably the time for her to decide her resolve.

Do you honestly need that much time? Is what I thought, well, it takes a different kind of courage to tell your ex everything and then confess again as compared to just telling your feelings to the person you like.

I feel guilty from my point of view, as if I'm the only one who will know what's going to happen from now on.

But, I don't care!

Even if I did care, I couldn't help it.

I couldn't fall in love with her.

After 10 minutes of waiting, Akira who has been waiting with me suddenly asked me a question.

“.....In the end how was it? Regarding her.”

“Nn? What do you mean? Were you talking about Koyomi?”

“No, that's not it.....The reason you accepted the false confession was because you were slightly interested in her right?”

Aah, so it's about that.

Or rather, do you have to ask that now? Was what I thought on my mind but we have some time until Koyomi arrives.

Even if Akira asked me at this point, I won't change my mind, there's no problem.

"Nn—? I'm not really sure.....Come to think of it, I don't think I've done anything too romantic with Koyomi since it's troublesome....."

"Fu—n. Well then, just tell me what you're going to do!"

"What am I going to do for what?"

"Koyomi's confession."

"No, I can't do that. First I have to tell Koyomi, right?"

"Hee—, weren't you planning on rejecting her?"

"That is a secret....."

"Then won't you tell me about your feelings?"

"What are you talking about?"

"The other day you told me that you would tell me all of your feelings right?"

"What's the difference between this question and the previous one?"

"I won't ask about the results.....okay?"

"Okay? Even if you say that.....Well, I guess I can tell you that much at least?"

"Ooh! As expected!"

"Yes yes.....At first I guess I didn't really care. I knew she was lying to me, so I didn't get nervous when she confessed. And at the time I was worrying about the new book release."

"I don't think you will even be nervous even if it's not a false confession!"

"Be quiet.....And then well, when the baseball ball was flying, my body moved on its own. But now when I think about it, the ball itself is small, weren't there better ways that I could have tried to save her? So when I received her confession I thought of her as a plague. Like did I even doubt her?"

“UnUn”

“When that one fan of hers came to the classroom, I wondered if the same kind of thing would happen in the future too. I almost fainted at the thought.”

“Hee. Were there still people who say that to you even now?”

“Un. Well, once they come they never stop coming.”

“As expected.....”

“After that, I would meet with her ex-boyfriend and listen to him talking endlessly, wasting my time talking about things I don’t really care about. I thought my tears were going to tear off. And when the ex-boyfriend left, she started crying so I was in a hurry.”

“Hee—. Then how was the date?”

“Nn—, I had fun going to the cafes and the amusement parks, you know? But...”

“But?”

“I don’t think I really enjoyed being together with Koyomi. Even now it wasn’t as if I really like Koyomi, and going on a date with her wasn’t really that fun. No, I even thought it was troublesome.”

“? I don’t really understand but you thought that playing itself is fun but the date was boring?”

“Well, that’s true. I think it was closer to boredom.....but,”

“But?”

“I wasn’t really bored. I never really felt bored when we were together. I admit that I do feel like going home at times, but never did I want to stop. I don’t know what she is usually like, but the world looks different.”

“Oh, oh—! Kouyou!”

“You’re loud....”

I had just finished talking and was about to take out a book to read when the classroom door opened and a male classmate walked in and looked at me with a surprised look on his face.

“Ah? It’s Kiyama!”

“Nn? What’s the matter?”

“No, just a while ago Tachibana-san was running away from the classroom. It looked as if she was leaving so I thought you were going to wait for her somewhere else....”

“Maybe she went back home first?”

“Eh? U—n.....probably...?”

“Ko, Kouyou? She only heard up until the.... Middle? When you said that it wasn’t fun.....”

“For the time being.....I’ll wait.....”
And after that, she didn’t come even after the promised 30 minutes.

I and Akira began our great search.

◇◇◇◇◇

(Koyomi’s POV)

I had 30 minutes to talk with Ena and the others while making my final preparations.

It didn’t take as long as I thought. Yesterday was really hard for me, but somehow today I was able to think positively instead of negatively.

It was probably because I mysteriously thought I’d be fine when I was protected yesterday.

But that was just a facade. I was mistaken.

I thought I would go to the classroom earlier, I was wondering what Kouyou and the others are talking about. I wasn’t planning on eavesdropping but I heard everything.

“Yes yes.....At first I guess I didn’t really care. I knew she was lying to me, so I didn’t get nervous when she confessed. And at the time I was worrying about the new book release.”

Eh? So he knew?

Then he really wasn’t in love with me.....

But, to go out with me even after knowing all that.....

I continued on listening after that.

And I heard that.

“I don’t think I really enjoyed being together with Koyomi. Even now it wasn’t as if I really like Koyomi, and going on a date with her wasn’t really that fun. No, I even thought it was troublesome.”

That.....can’t be.....

So does that mean.....

That smile.....all of it.....wasn’t directed at me.....?

“Well, that’s true. I think it was closer to boredom.....but,”

I know that

I knew that the chances of being rejected were higher.

But Kouyou knew all about it, and on top of that, he didn’t like me.

I didn’t mind if he dumped me because of the punishment.

But when I am denied like this, it is harder than I imagined.

I get it. I know that I shouldn’t run away.

But, my feet didn’t stop.

The tears flowed naturally before I could think to hold them back.

I don’t want it. I don’t want to break up. I don’t want it.

I’m scared.....

I know I’m wrong.

———I broke the promise, and ran away.

Chapter 25

“I’m really sorryyyy!”

“It’s fine, for now is there anything? Like somewhere she might go? We’ve already looked everywhere around here right? ”

The sun has started to set and it will soon be dark. It's Friday today so there's no school tomorrow. I would like to find her today if it's possible.

Captain Muscle had searched her house but it seems like she hasn't come back so I'm pretty sure she's out there somewhere.

"No, we usually visit Koyomi's house when we come to play, so we don't know where she might go. How about Kouyou, do you know anywhere she might go?"

"There's none unfortunately. I haven't been to a lot of places with her in the first place. If I had known this would happen I would have listened to Koyomi a little more attentively....."

"Nn—.....Ah! Ena might know!"

"You should have said that earlier if you had known/"

"I'll call her for a while!"

And she then spent a few minutes on the phone.

"Oi, I got it!"

"Where is it?"

"The Sankaku Park!"

".....Where is that?"

"Aah, I see! It's a park near our junior high school, and the two of them used to hang out there a lot. It's apparently Koyomi's favorite place."

"A park we visited during the third-year of junior high school?"

"There's a place to view flowers too along with a basketball court and a lot of other things!"

"She's surprisingly boyish.....So, is it somewhere close?"

"Aah! It's rather close to Koyomi's house!"

".....And where is that?"

This person is an idiot.

"Aah, umm it's around 1 train station away from here!"

“To think that she even went all that way to use a train...Won’t people usually normally go to a nearby place in this kind of situation.....?”

“Well it’s fine, for the time being let’s quickly go there!”

“Aah, I got it.”

◇◇◇◇◇

[Koyomi’s POV]

I’m currently in a place called the Sankaku Park.

I didn’t actually mean to come here.

I just somehow arrived here.

Maybe because I felt like I could somehow sort out my feelings here.

When I was a child, my mother happened to be free from work, so we had a cherry blossom flower viewing party here once.

It’s not just that.

When I dumped Sakai, when he attempted a rape, when I had been on the verge of falling into depression, I had spent time here with Ena to heal my wounds.

But it’s no good.....

I can’t recover on my own here.....

Haah.....

What should I do on Monday?

Won’t it be awkward?

No, the other party doesn’t even like me, maybe it’s because the punishment from the punishment game is only limited to one month.....

I guess I won’t be able to talk anymore from Monday on.....

“Uuuuu.....uuu.....”

My tears came out naturally.

It won’t listen to the brake that I tried to use to stop crying.

“.....Kou.....you.....”

Kouyou’s name came out of my mouth.

This might be the last time I can call his name.

I’m just too sad, it’s just too sad I can’t help it.

“Did you call? Koyomi.”

I heard Kouyou’s voice and turned around as quickly as I could.

.....How?

◇◇◇◇◇

[Kouyou’s POV]

It’s already dark.

When I arrived at the park, I saw a figure crouched down.
It’s definitely Koyomi.

“Akira, you can go home first.”

“Eh?”

“From now on, it’s enough if it’s just Koyomi and me.”

“I understand.....”

Akira went home after saying that.

I approached Koyomi.

She turned her back to me while still crouched down and cried aloud.
She was just so loud she didn’t hear my footsteps at all.

“.....Kou.....you.....”

My name was called.

I wonder how she felt when she called me.

My heart hurts a little but I tried to not let it show on my face as I replied.

“Did you call? Koyomi.”

She looked surprised as she turned back to face me.

“What’s the matter? Since you didn’t come at all, I went to search for you, you know?”

“No, no way.....How do you know where I am?”

“Like I said, it’s because you didn’t come....”

“Just because of that? Even though you don’t like me?”

“So you heard it after all.....how far did you hear?”

“Until you, until you said that being with me is boring.....”

“I see.....I’m sorry. I knew that it was a false confession. I just happened to hear the conversation.”

“Then why!”

“I wanted to know how it felt like to have a girlfriend. Since it was only for a month, I thought that maybe it would be fine. But I really didn’t think that Koyomi would actually like me..... I noticed your feeling, but I was at a lost as to what I should do..... ”

“Then, why do you come?”

“Because there is still something that I hadn’t conveyed to you yet.”

“No! I don’t want to hear it.....”

“Koyomi.....”

“Don’t come closer.....!”

When I tried to approach her, she faced downwards and closed her ears.

“I thought that I had the resolve to be rejected! But I wasn’t at all!I still, I still don’t want to break up with you yet.....!”

“But.....”

“I get it.....I get it.....since we broke up, please.....leave me alone for now.....”

I couldn’t help but gently hug Koyomi when she cried heartbreakingly.

Koyomi let out a strange voice for a moment, but I didn't care and just hugged her for a while.

Since she calmed down, I separated my body and placed my hands on Koyomi's shoulder while looking at her eyes while I spoke.

"Please, listen to what I have to say....."

".....I get it.....But, if that's the case, let me do my confession first....."

"Aah.....Alright....."

Then, Koyomi hugged me tightly, pressed her face to my chest, and said while crying..

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry.....I'm sorry.....I'm sorry for the false confession.....!"

"Koyomi....."

Then she looks away and turns to face me.

Our eyes met.

"I love you.....Can we be real lovers?"

"Won't you.....make me your real girlfriend?"

She's crying.

The past month has been invaluable to me.

I can't thank Koyomi enough.

Even if it is a punishment game, even if it's a false confession, I'm still glad that we have a chance to speak like this.

That's why I,

I...

I.....!

Chapter 26

.....!!

"I'm sorry. I can't reciprocate those feelings."

These are my feelings.

"I, I see.....I'm sorry."

"I don't like you as a person of the opposite sex. So I can't respond."

"I.....get it.....I'm sorry.....Just a while.....I'm sorry but is it okay.....for me to cry.....a little?"

"Un, I understand....."

After saying that, Koyomi continued to cry for about ten minutes. As if she forgot to breathe, she just kept crying, sometimes sobbing repeatedly.

Then, when she stopped crying, she wiped her tears with her hand and looked at me.

Her eyelids were swollen and her eyes were red.

"I'm sorry. For making you wait....."

"Uun. Are you okay now?"

"Un.....It's a lie. I'm not fine but.....I can endure it."

"I see....."

"Hey."

"Nn?"

"Can we continue to be friends from now on, is it okay for us talk and play together?"

"The "Let's start by being friends" thing?"

"Un.....That kind of thing.....Is that no good.....?"

"No, that's okay. If that's what Koyomi wishes for."

"Thank you....."

The silence continues. Koyomi is no longer crying.

When I was looking at that, my mouth silently opened.

“.....Hey”

“Nn?”

“Can I ask for one more thing?”

“Eh.....Un.....”

“Didn’t you apologize for lying to me about the punishment game?”

“?.....U, un.”

“If it’s possible.....Can you do so with actions and not just by words?”

“Yeah, you’re right.....What should I do...?”

“As an apology, I’d like you to play a game with me now. Is that okay?”

“.....A game?”

“That’s right, a game.....but if there’s nothing at stake it would be boring.....Un.....How about with the condition that the losing side should do a punishment made by the winner?”

“Eh?”

Koyomi opened her mouth while looking puzzled.

“The contents of the punishment game.....Let’s see.....”

“———Confess to the person you like, and d • a • t • e them for 3 months!”

“Eh, eh?”

“Weren’t you misunderstanding something? It’s true that I only felt bored when I was with koyomi but I never felt tired of you. It was just the right amount of boredom in my life. This past month has been precious to me as well.”

“Is, is that true?”

“Of course. It’s true that I don’t really think much about Koyomi right now. But you see?I want to think that I wanted to fall in love with you. Not anyone else. Even if it’s a punishment game, I’m still glad that it gave us a chance to interact with each other.”

“Bu-, but.....you rejected my confession.....”

“Un. That’s exactly why. I haven’t liked Koyomi yet. That’s why I still can’t reciprocate Koyomi’s confession seriously. I don’t want to do it half-heartedly. But if it’s just a punishment game then I can answer you. I can be your temporary lover with a time limit. That’s why.....”

“———Please make me fall in love with you in these 3 months...”

“Of course this is just a suggestion. If you found someone else you like, you are free to stop and find yourself a new love. Naturally it’s just a period of 3 months. Whether you want to or not depends on Koyomi.....What do you think?”

After saying that, Koyomi sheds a few tears again, wipes them with her hand and looks at me with a determined face.

“What’s the content of the game?”

“Fufu.....Let’s see..... It would just be a charade if one were to lose on purpose, so a game without tricks that can be used is ideal.....Ah!.....How about the [I love you game]? Wouldn’t that be perfect for us right now?”

“U, un!”

Then, the two of us begin to play a game of looking at each other.

“Let’s start with Koyomi first.”

“U, un.....I love you.”

“Nn—, once more”

“I, I love you.”

“Once more”

“I love you”

“Once more”

“I love you!”

So I’m still not flustered.....

This is how it is for now I guess.....

“Then, next is my turn.”

“.....Un”

I stared into Koyomi’s eyes and brought my face slightly closer to hers.

“.....I love you”

When I said it as gently as I could, Koyomi’s face grew redder and redder, and she hastily turned her face away and covered it with her hands.

“On-, once more.”

“I don’t want to. Koyomi already lost.”

“I, I haven’t lost....Once more”

“No”

“Please! Once more!”

“I get it, I get it. I’ll do it later. More importantly, the punishment game.”

“.....U, un.”

She paused, took a breath while looking at me shyly.

“Ko, Kouyou.....I love you. Please go out with me.....”

“Yes, of course!”

“Then, I’ll definitely.....make you fall in love with me within these 3 months!”

“Un, I’m looking forward to it.”

“Nn? What’s the matter?”

I put my hands on her shoulders, brought her face close to mine, and said as softly and strongly as I could.

“Koyomi, I love you.”

“Whoa, whoa,!”

“Fuhaha!.....You’re bright red!”

“Why are you telling me this now~!”

“The mood calls for it?”

“N, nn.....Baka!”

“I’m counting on you alright? Koyomi.”

“Un, un. Me too.....”

We talked for a while after that and dissolved.

She said that she didn’t need me to send her home because her house was close by.

From Koyomi’s perspective, this might seem a little bit more complicated.....

But, I couldn’t think of anything else.

At any rate, Koyomi and I became lovers again, in a slightly strange way, by lying to each other in a punishment game.

Chapter 27 – Volume 2

It had been a little over a week since Koyomi falsely confessed to me for the second time.

After explaining it properly to Akira and the others, they were happy that we were going out.

Akira kept calling me tsundere to the point that it’s bothering me, so I punched him for now.

It’s not like anything much has changed, I don’t ask her on dates on my own like always, and there’s no such development such as us going to school together or her making me boxed lunch.

“Hey—hey—”

“What’s the matter?”

“Do you like me?”

“I don’t remember saying I like you in the first place though?”

“You’re lying—”

“Did you RINE me just to hear that worthless stuff? Can I sleep now?”

“I’m sorry, sorry alright. It’s a lie, I’m just joking.”

“Then what’s the matter?”

Koyomi really put a ban on me saying goodnight except for sleeping. Yes, I thought that was a terrible way to treat her, but the content of what she’s sending me was pretty meaningless.

Well, I guess real couples do those sorts of things, but there are all sorts of couples. So I think it’s fine to be different.

“I was wondering if you had anything you wanted to do.”

“What is that? A dirty joke?”

“That’s not it—! That’s sexual harassment you know?”

It’s true that this one might be my fault.....

“Then what is it?”

“Eh—! Didn’t you listen to what I said at school?”

“Un, for the most part.”

“There’s a discussion regarding the program for the festival tomorrow.”

“Aah, I see.”

“Do you have anything you want to do?”

“I don’t particularly have anything I guess”

“Just like usual huh—”

“Yeah”

“I think it’s good if the school festival becomes fun!”

“That’s true.”

After the RINE ended, I laid down in my bed for a while.

The school festival huh.....

I have already forgotten about the one last year too.....

◇◇◇◇◇

“Okay then, let’s start discussing what we’re going to do for the school festival!”

“Ah, Nonoka. Before that can I have a moment?”

“Nn? It’s fine but....?”

“O—i! Kouyou—! Wake up—!”

“Nn.....It’s noisy.....”

“Don’t “It’s noisy” me. You participate in the discussion too.”

“Yes yes, I get it I get it”

Akira woke me up.

Akira and Hirayama were standing in front of the blackboard.

They were the two class representatives, and Hirayama was the chairperson.

“So we’re going to have a discussion, but first we have to decide whether we want to use the stage in the gym or the classroom. Which do you prefer? Raise your hand if you prefer one or the other!”

I guess that’s as good as it gets.

There was no private conversation, and everything went smoothly.

The result was a classroom project.

I guess almost no one wanted to stand out on their own.

“Then let’s decide what we’re going to do next! Come up with any ideas you have!”

“Maid cafe.” “Cafe.” “Yaki-soba!” “Maid cafe!” “I want some kind of restaurant!” “Maid cafe!” “I want to sell crepes and stuff.” “Yukata cafe!”

“Scoop goldfish!” “Ding-dong! The correct answer is Echigo Seika! “You just want to do that! “Maid cafe!” “Maid cafe!” This problem is Toyotomi Hideyoshi’s nationwide land survey!

“Okay, okay, thank you.”

No, what’s OK with you? You’ve only been talking about maid cafes since a while ago. You’re completely showing the boys’ personal desires.

What is it with Echigo Seika, really?

And don't study right now, skinny boy!

“Er, well, there are a lot of maid cafes, and this is almost a decision, but I'd like to ask the girls for permission!”

After that, the fight between the boys and girls started.

The boys wanted to see the girls, especially the Kami7, as maids at all costs.

I was kind of asked to agree with my classmates.

“You wanted to see your girlfriend as a maid too right!?”

Something like that.

For the time being, I replied not really to all of them.

It's not that I don't want to see it, but I don't really want to see it either.

It's just that I'd be lucky to see it.

In the end, the fight went on for a while, and by the time the end chime finished ringing, the boys had lost and somehow settled for the position of butler cafe.

.....Why?

And Koyomi is looking at me with a twinkle in her eye.

I'm sure she's having some kind of wicked fantasy.

I won't do it!

.....Definitely

Chapter 28

Our school festival became a butler festival for now

It seemed like a compromise, but I figured that the girls just wanted to see Kami7 as a butler.

Well! It has nothing to do with me anyways.

"Kouyou! You do it too! The butler cafe."

"Kouyou—! Do it! Please?"

It has something to do with me sadly. Akira and Koyomi have been persuading me seriously.

It seems like there has been suspicions that I'm actually a cool guy since I started dating Koyomi and because of that I have been asked by several of my classmates to participate. But when I tell them, "If I have to do this, then I'll stay at home during that day.", they all backed off quietly.

But!

These two are the only ones who are too obstinate to give up. Since they both knew where my house is, they are planning to take me there even if they have drag me there on the way. Therefore, threats won't work.

“I told you I don’t like it right. And there’s no point for me being a butler in the first place.”

“No, no. If you actually dress up properly you are actually a relatively good-looking person.”

“I know.”

“But for me it’s the best request?”

“I know.”

“” Then isn’t it fine!””

“No way!”

“Why—”

“Actually won’t it be better for me to be in the kitchen?”

“Ah, I see! You are good at cooking after all.....”

“Yes, that’s right. That’s why.....”

“Speaking of which, what are you serving at the cafe?”

“Nn—, for the time being the appropriate choices for drinks are juice, black tea, coffee, and cocoa.”

“How about the food?”

“Regarding that, we haven’t decided at all. For now, crepes and parfaits have been chosen since Kouyou is so obstinate about it, but some people thought it would be a good idea to serve more staple foods.....”

Yes, our school is the type of school that puts a lot of effort into its cultural festival or rather the type of school that spends a lot of time on the cultural festival.

And the reason for that is.....

It’s because this school is connected to the next class by a single door. The back wall of the classroom and the front wall of the next class are connected by a single door, allowing students to come and go without using the hallway. The soundproofing is perfect.

Normally, the door is locked and no one can come and go, but it is opened only during the cultural festival.

In other words, if you are planning to serve food in a classroom, this classroom will be the place where you will put desks and chairs for your guests to sit, and the classroom next to it will be the place where you will prepare the food. The next classroom is where the food will be prepared, and it’s the shortest way to get there without going through the hallway.

Which means that no matter what kind of inflexible staple foods that we plan on making, there is more than enough space to make them. Which means that it’s OK.

They are serious.....

“Hmm. Then why don’t you just think of the recipe and be a butler on the day?”

“No that can’t do. In reality, if I focus on making it won’t it be more delicious?”

“But, you surely will get your break time anyways so they need guidance one way or the other right? Right! Please!”

“Gumumu.....”

Damn it! I can’t retort back.

“Yeah yeah! Come on, let’s do it.”

“But I don’t want to, I don’t want to do it.....”

“Isn’t it fine—. Let’s do it—!”

“Why does Akira want me to do it so badly anyways!”

“Isn’t that obvious! Because we’re aiming for first place!”

Here it is.

This school's bad custom.

Apparently this class is also aiming for first place.

Well there are three members of Kami7 here, and a few others who aren't too bad themselves which can be used to pull female customers.

So even an ordinary one is enough to aim for the top.

And I'm just barely handsome enough, and more importantly, I have the buzz of being Koyomi's boyfriend.

This is an opportunity that shouldn't be missed

But, why first place?

To begin with, the first place depends on the sales of each grade.

You have to buy a ticket in advance to enter the stage presentation.

By the way, the budget for the preparation is borrowed in advance with no upper limit.

If you specify a certain amount of money, they will lend you the money but by the time the festival ends you have to pay them 1.2 times that amount by using the sales from the festival, which is very realistic.

Huh? If you need more than you thought? If you think you need more than you thought, you can just borrow more.

What? I don't need it as much as I thought. If you feel that you don't need it as much as you thought, you can refund the money and get rid of the debt for that amount.

By the way, if the sales on the day of the event are not enough to return the money, the students in the class will pay 70% of the shortage, and the homeroom teacher will pay 10%. The remaining 20% goes to the service.

They can spend the extra money however they want.

Which brings me to the first question, why do we want to be in first place? It's simple: there are prizes.

The first place winner will receive a special trip of three days and two nights.

Where does the money come from? From the interests that the students pay of course. In other words, we can have a super luxury vacation,

The school's festival is famous and attracts a lot of visitors, so sometimes there are companies that want to advertise and offer prizes. There are even some companies that want to sponsor the event.

In addition, many of next year's freshmen will try to take the exam for the purpose of the cultural festival, so it's a golden cycle with no shortage of students.

Seriously, this is so cool.

And that's exactly why everyone is serious about this.

"I mean.....if you really want to get the top spot, won't you have to attract men along with girls? I don't think you can do that by just being popular with women."

That's right. If you are just trying to attract customers by their physical appearance, you won't be able to get first place unless you do it for both the men and women.

The School festival.

It's basically like war for the ones participating in it.

Author's Note:

If there was a cultural festival like this, I'd laugh down my nose.

Well, I'm crying blood tears of envy.

Chapter 29

"Well, I'd like to start discussing the items for the cultural festival again!"

"Aye."

"Eh—, it seems like there were several opinions that say if we were to seriously aim for first place, just having butlers won't be enough."

"Yeah—!"

The boys are so noisy.

Good thing I was able to get away from being a butler by diverting the conversation.

In the first place, if I'm a butler it will be difficult for me to escape from being a butler since the girls were in charge of the cooking and the boys were in charge of the services.

“Eh—, then I think I'll add some other components that seems lacking. Is there anything that you can think of!?”

“If we already have butlers for the boys, then how about maids for the girls!”

“I see～. There's that too～. How about the girls?”

…….Silence

Well, I guess that's to be expected. After all, they forced us to be butlers.

There's no helping it.

“But, you know—the whole point of this discussion is to not just fish women customers into our store right?”

To fish.....

Yumekawa, word it differently!

“Well, that's basically it in a nutshell.”

“To be honest, if we're aiming for first place, I think our target audience is not the students of this school, but the adults who come on the day.”

“Well, that’s also true.....”

“I don’t think adults other than the parent’s of the students are allowed to come to the school festival.”

“Well, based on the results from the previous years’, yeah.”

“And so, the target audience for the butlers are going to be the students of this school and young women who are interested in the leaflets and decided to come right?”

“Yeah.”

“I don’t think this is a problem for butlers since those are the types that will come but I don’t think a good old man will come to a maid cafe—”

“I see.....That’s true”

“In that case, wouldn’t it be better to go with something else?”

“” Yeah—!””

“I guess that’s also true.”

The girls shout cheers of joy, while the boys become unable to retort.

This is definitely a sound argument.

While targeting the adults, we also need to do something that will make young people come as well.

You could just make the food that you serve delicious, but the advertising will be troublesome.

Or rather, making something delicious with a noticeable difference against the other competitors is not something easy to do.

“Then, what should we do—”

“Well, I think it’s nice to be able to dress up as a maid, but I guess it’s still embarrassing.....This is not compulsory and only those who are willing to do it should do it. Well I’m willing to do it since I suggested it. And for adults who aren’t interested in maids, I think we have to play it safe and go for the taste.”

“Nn—, but—, it’s just something made by high school students, and more importantly, it’s hard to advertise.”

“Maybe we could do some advertising, like handing out flyers with tastings?”

“What should we do about the taste of the food?”

“How about we have some other shop make the food?”

“It’s like borrowing the name and taste of a sponsored restaurant while further raising the profile of that restaurant and its cuisine.”

“But is there anyone who can help me with that?”

Oh, there they are. Just the right people.

Haah.....

I recalled last year's matter.....

It was difficult thanks to those two.....

The morning of the day, they started fighting and I ended up being late to stop them.

I was even more angry than usual because I was really into the festival, and the two of them were also in a bad mood and tense during the festival.

And then there's Well, I'm sure that guy will be happy to do it.

“Nn—, do you have any suggestions? Kouyou”

“Why do you ask me?”

“There's more to it than meets the eye, isn't there?”

I can't argue with that.....

“I think the manager and the others from my part-time job can handle it.”

“But it’s not as captivating as it sounds.”

“No, there is a secret menu.”

“.....What is that?”

“The manager is an idiot, so he admires the secret menu, and that secret menu is something he and Nene-san created together.....”

“Hee, What kind of stuff do you have?”

“It’s all about the brown sauce of so-called B-grade gourmet foods like yakisoba and takoyaki.....”

“That’s also biased.....”

“It’s easy for Nene-san since she’s not in charge of cooking, and the manager adores the secret sauce.”

“The manager is free.....Is that good?”

“I’ve had it a few times when I was working, and it’s pretty good. I cook it just the way I like it, so there’s that, but it’s still good enough to make me want to eat it voluntarily.”

“Oh.....that’s great! Go ahead and order it!”

“No, actually, there’s another one:”

“Eh! Really.....”

“Personally, I don’t want to rely on them too much, but I’m sure they’ll have a lot to say after the festival anyway.”

“Hee—, who is it?”

“My father, a chef, who made my taste buds for food, and my mother, a pastry chef, who made me love sweets.”

“Eh, it’s no wonder.....”

Yes, it was my father’s fault that I became so obsessed with food, and it was my mother’s fault that I like sweet foods since she gave me so many sweets.

I’m sure they will come to the festival again this year.

But I don’t want to rely on them if I can help it.

However, if you’re relying on a restaurant that serves food and you don’t ask for help, you’ll get quite a lot of feedback.

Why don’t I want to rely on them.....?

It’s not as if I’m a rebel or anything.

Probably because we’d get into a fight.

My parents don't get along well with each other.....

..... Enough to separate them.

Chapter 30

“Eh—! Kouyou is divorcing!?”

“I didn't say that I was getting divorced though”

After school on the day when the festival was discussed again, everyone in Kami7 is on their way to ask the manager for help as soon as possible.

This was their response when I told them that my parents were divorced.

“Why did that happen?”

“There wasn't particularly any stupid reason for it. It was just because they fought a lot, so they thought it would be better to separate and therefore that's what they did.”

“Heeh.....”

“They came to the festival together last year but they had a fight. If possible I wouldn't want to rely on both of them. They might fight again.”

“Kouyou’s parents huh—! I would like to meet and greet them. “Hello! I’m your future daughter!” is what I’d like to say.”

“I’m interested too—”

“I personally don’t want to meet them. Because they can be very annoying.”

“Eh! Are they strict?”

“No, it’s the opposite. They are too indulging to the point that it’s annoying. They wouldn’t ignore Koyomi’s joke and would probably banter with her.”

“I wasn’t joking though—”

“Then it’s going to be more troublesome. They thought of me living alone on my own as a cute kid going on a journey, so they didn’t feel any particular resistance towards it. But they are a little too overprotective.....They will probably start fighting whether they are your father or your mother.”

“Hmm. Then they are absolutely bad at getting along with each other.....”

“Well, that’s true.....”

“What’s the matter?”

“If you don’t get along with each other then you just don’t have to see each other so there is usually no problem, but how should I say it.....it’s the kind of not getting along like the ones in romantic comedy.”

“What do you mean?”

“They are the ones that separated and now they say they miss each other after 3 days. And they don’t want to meet the other side on their own! And whenever they meet, they always fight because they can’t be honest with each other and due to the tension. And yet they speak sweetly about each other once they make up. Isn’t that annoying?”

“That, that is certainly.....a little annoying....”

“Right? It feels like they are too old for this.”

In the meantime, we were at a family restaurant.

“Hey—”

“Oh it’s Kouyou-chan! And his friend!”

“I’m his girlfriend!”

“Oh, I’m sorry.”

I told the people at my part-time job what had happened with Koyomi. Rumi made fun of me for being a bit of a jerk, though.

“Nene-san, where is the manager?”

“Oh, it’s rare for you to find something for the manager to do!”

“Yes, well. It has something to do with Nene-san, though.”

“Is that so! I’m happy!.....Kenji-cha~n!”

He came out when Nene-san called him.

“Hmm, Kouyou-kun. Did you come to visit again?”

“Yeah, but not as a customer though.”

“Eh! Is that so?”

“Well, it’s slightly different”

“Aah, I see.....then what’s the matter?”

You’re so blatantly depressed.

If that’s the case, why don’t you stop using the back menu right now?

I don’t think there are enough regulars in this restaurant to know about the back menu.

With that in mind, I took a seat and proceeded with the conversation.

“In fact, our class is going to have a coffee shop or something like that at the upcoming school festival, and we’d like you to lend us the back menu of this store so that we can get first place in sales. If we can sell it there, we can advertise the store and I think our sales will increase.”

“I see...I see. But I’m not going to stop using the back menu, okay?”

“Oh, no problem. I’ll tell everyone who comes to use the back menu.”

“Hmm. What do you think? Nene-san.”

“Hmm, yeah. I don’t think it’s a bad idea. I don’t think there’s anything wrong with it, but lending out the menu for free is a bit much.

“I see. How much, approximately?”

“No, no, no, Nene-san. I’m not that devilish. I just want them to enjoy the festival as much as possible.

“That’s very kind of you, manager.”

“It’s a bit of a stick! How about something like this then? Kouyou will not be paid for this month. In addition to that, you have to do one thing for me, Nene-san and Rumi.”

“No, that is surely the work of a devil.”

“” Ko, Kouyou.....””

Everyone looks at me with sparkling eyes.
Yes, yes, I understand.

“Well it’s fine but.....why for Rumi-chan too?”

“Because if I leave her out, who knows what she’ll say about me!”

“That’s not good enough, manager.....”

“Rumi-chan’s really scary!”

“No, well..... I have a pretty good understanding of that too though...”

“Right? I know, right? Well, for the time being your objective here is finished, right?”

“Yeah. Give it to me next time I’m on shift.”

“Okay.....Well then!”

“? Then?”

The moment I stood up to leave, I was approached by a voice.

“Don’t you think it’s unfair that you’re the only ones who get what you want?”

“That’s, well.....”

“I’ll ask each of you to order something. And by the way, I’m not going to charge you!”

“I see. Well, that’s fine.”

“I see, one dish. I want to eat the back menu!”

“Ah, me too—!”

After that, everyone but me ordered from the back menu and ate.

It must have suited their tastes, because all I could hear were voices saying how delicious it was.

The manager is too happy to the point of shedding tears.

Too much joy.

Although, now all that’s left is my parents.....

Haahh....

I'm not sure what to do...

Chapter 31

That night, I went back home, and sighed on my own.

Haahh.....

I have to contact my parents next.

It wasn't as if I'm particularly having a hard time contacting my parents.

But I can't contact both of them at the same time.

That's right, contacting one of them first would make them feel superior.

Going through all this trouble just to contact them....

No, it's normal to usually want to talk about that.....

So I'm not sure who I should contact first, the righteous mother or the daring father.

Nn—..... This is very distressing.....

◇◇◇◇◇

The next day, the cultural festival was discussed again.

“So, did your parents say it was okay?”

“.....Both of them said okay.”

“I see—! Thanks—!”

In the end, I contacted my mother as usual.

What happens after that, I don't give a damn.

“So we're pretty much set!”

“” Yeah—!””

“Akira! Now that we've decided on the food, what about the drinks?”

“That's the problem, isn't it? Juice is fine for kids, but I want to serve the best tea, coffee, and even cocoa.”

“Then how about at my place of work? I called them yesterday and they said okay.”

Hirayama replies.

“Oh! Really? Is it good?”

“Yeah, it’s pretty small in scale, but it’s pretty popular.”

“Well, that’s just perfect!”

Now we have a handle on the food and drink issue.

The next thing to decide is probably.....

“Is there anyone who would be willing to be a maid?”

“”” ”

Well, I guess that’s to be expected.

Is it embarrassing for a boy to dress up as a butler? If you ask me, I would be embarrassed, but probably not as embarrassed as a girl wearing a maid’s outfit.

Yumekawa is amazing.

“I don’t mind that since I sometimes dress like that for my part-time work.....”

“Ooh! Really! Thanks Yuuki!”

One person who was willing to do it appeared.

Her name was Yuki Shibata, I think.

This was the second person.

But from Akira's point of view, he wants at least a third of the total.

“Hey hey, Shizuku and Koyomi, both of you wear it too!”

“.....I definitely don't want to do it.”

“I have someone I want to consult in....”

“Eh—”

Yumekawa invites them as well, but they refuse.

Well, Momoyama would never do that. Character-wise.

“Hmm, maybe we should each take some time to discuss it?”

“Well, that's right.....Okay! Begin the consultation!”

The classroom was buzzing.

There are even boys who get down on their knees and begged the girls for help.

Where have you thrown away your pride?

Consultation huh

Koyomi said she would like some consulting, so I guess there's hope. The boys around me are starting to persuade her.

What do you mean by consultation?

I heard something along those lines.

I'm sure it's more like a negotiation than a consultation.

Of course, I won't join in on those.....

"Kouyou! If I wore a maid uniform, would you become a butler?"

"No, I won't."

See? I had guessed it would be something like this.

"Why? Don't you want to see me as a maid?"

"Of course I want to see it. But if I had to become a butler then I don't want to."

"Y,y-y-you want to see it!?"

"If you are going to turn red then don't ask...."

"I'm not turning red!"

“Yes yes”

How many times do we have to go through this? I’m tired of it.

“Then, isn’t it fine! You can put up with being a butler right!”

“No way. Why do I have to wear that. In the first place, Koyomi is the only one who want me to wear those uniforms.”

“That, that’s true but.....”

“How about we show each other in private sometime? I’ll put up with it.”

“Ju, just the both of us.....Will you really show it!?”

“Un, is that not good?”

“...It, it’s fine but.....”

I did it. She is too easy.

I’m sure I’ll forget about it by the time the festival is over.

Well, even if I hadn’t forgotten, I could just barely stand the embarrassment if I was alone with Rekizuki.

Nn? What is it? Even I can be embarrassed, you know?

“But, Koyomi-san. If things go well, you’ll be able to have a date with Kiyama dressed as a butler at the cultural festival, and dance at the after-party!”

“.....Hah!”

Damn it! Shut up you guys.....

He’s looking at me with a smirk on his face.

It’s very annoying.

Koyomi and the other boys doesn’t seem like they are going to let me off the hook.

There’s no way I can escape this.

Incidentally, there is no such thing as a jinx at the end of the festival.

Or rather, there is no such event for lovers unless there is such a performance.

“Haha yes, yes, I’ll wear it, I’ll wear it.”

“Yay—!”

“So you’ll be wearing a maid’s outfit, too, Koyomi-san?”

Rumble! Rattle, rattle, rattle!

“” Are you sure!?””

Where did you come from!?

Why are you eavesdropping as a matter of course?

“Well, it wouldn’t be fair if it was just Kouyou.....”

“” ” Yay!!!”””

There was a festive atmosphere in the classroom and even in the hallway.

It’s so popular!

Well, in the meantime, it seems that there are others who are willing to do the same.

Half the boys are on the verge of tears. Good for them.

I still don’t think Momoyama is going to wear it though.

...It’s nice to be you—

“Then let’s start deciding on the details, like prices and decorations!”

“” Okay-!””

The boys were even more motivated.

There are only 10 days left until the school festival.

Chapter 32

“Good morning!”

After school the next day, they immediately made flyers and began to prepare for the festival while dividing into a flyer distribution team, a shopping team, and a decoration team.

Me, Rekizuki and Akira are in the leaflet distribution team.

Rekizuki and Akira’s job is to pull the customers , and I was forced to do it because Koyomi insisted.

But the number of the leaflets hasn’t gone down at all.

I guess I’ll go check on Akira for a while.

“Oi—, Akira—”

“What is it? Are you done already?”

“No, not at all……How about you?”

“I have around 10 leaflets left.”

“You’re fast!”

No, he really is fast. I can't believe he can give out almost 100 leaflets during the span of one hour.....

I've only given out about 30 percent of mine.

"Isn't Koyomi even faster? Why don't you go and take a look?"

"Nn? Aah, that's right."

And so I went to Koyomi's place. To my surprise, there was a woman who had already finished handing out the leaflets and was busy fiddling with her phone.

Damn it all.....they are biased towards the good-looking one after all!

"Are you finished already?"

"Ah, Kouyou! Yeah I just finished."

"That's fast. Can you help a little?"

"Un, okay—"

Then I asked Koyomi to help me, but her pace was completely different.

It's amazing.....how people can be so honest to strangers. If it was me then I wouldn't even spare a glance.

"Huh? You're so cute. Do you want to play for a while?"

Uwahh, here it is—. The old-fashioned pick-up artist. And there are 4 of them.

This is a nasty one.

“Ah, I’m sorry. I’m currently in the middle of a school activity.....”

“Then, tell me when you are done. Or better yet, tell me your RINE. Let’s have a good time on this summer vacation!”

“No, I...already have a boyfriend.....”

“It’s fine, it’s fine. It’s fine if you don’t get found out.”

I already found out though. I’m just right beside you after all.

“No, umm, this is really troubling me.....”

“It’s fine! Let’s play—. It’s fine! I’m not going to hurt you!”

“No, but.....”

“We’re just going to play a little! Hey!”

“But, I have a boyfriend.....”

“Like I say, it’s fine if you are not found out.”

And it’s already found out since I’m looking at it.

“No, this, this person here is my boyfriend!”

As she said that, she grabbed my arm and pulled me close.

Uwahh.....Huh? Is what the expression you are making now looks like.....This is the worst.

“Don’t tell me those makeshift lies”

“It’s, it’s true!”

“Ah—.....It is true though.....”

“Haa? For real? You’re dating this guy? Stop it! I am better than him!”

“No.....This one is cooler.”

“You just haven’t realized it. We can teach you something better.”

“It’s fine.....Just come with us instead of this gloomy spectacles okay?”

“But.....”

“Hey! So let’s see how cool this guy is. Hey, you!”

“Eh? What’s that? Sc.....ary?”

“Why are you lying to me like that? Let’s see how cool you are!”

“And how would we do that?”

“There’s only one thing that man would do right!?”

“Ko, Kouyou! Let’s run!”

“Hehe! We won’t let you get away!”

One of them grabbed Koyomi’s arm.
Alright, this is an out—! This is completely out—!

“Haah.....I don’t want to..Would you let go of that hand? I’m not telling you to stop picking up girls. I’m not saying you should stop if someone already have a boyfriend. But you just can’t grab her arm if she doesn’t want it. And I don’t have a reason in the first place to participate in this game. Can you let go now?”

“What? You don’t have confidence? You’re a lousy son of a bitch!”

“No, that’s not the case.....In the first place, we are currently doing a school activity, you should do these types of things in private.”

“Don’t you dare mess with me!”

Uwahh.....

This is the type that can’t use languages properly.

“I’ve never been in a fight before after all.....Why don’t we play something safer? Besides, I would be angry if I got into a fight during a school activity.....”

“Shut up!”

The guy who seems to be the leader and is talking all the time kicks me lightly in the stomach. It doesn’t hurt as much as I thought it would, yeah. This guy went easy on me. He’s a good guy.

“Kouyou!.....Stop it!”

“No, that is really just.....”

“You’re obstinate!”

He punched me in the face. I quickly turn my upper body upside down to avoid it.

“No, you’re the one who is obstinate here”

“Ouou, you’re doing great!”

“Kouyou! Kouyou!”

Koyomi’s cries went unheard, and the first of his minions attacked.

I don’t want to get hurt. Nor do I want to get angry either.

I would like neither of them.....

.....I wouldn’t want to get hurt more though.

I avoided it as quickly as I could, but the momentum had made it impossible to stop, so I caught my foot and let it roll.

“Uwoh!”

———Boom.

“Alright, this is my win!”

As I was about to say, one of his friends tried to hit me.

I dodged the blow and delivered a beautiful single-backed blow. The knowledge I had learned in junior high school physical education was now in full bloom.

And then the one who was holding Koyomi's arm attacked me from behind. I kicked with my heel before my opponent did. I hit him in the face, and he fell to the ground.

Uwagh.....This is painful.

“You bastard, to make fun of me!”

The first one I had just defeated struck me again. I avoided it, threw a hook, and beat him.

It's so easy.

“F#ck you! Making light of us!”

I'm not making light of you though. In fact you were the ones who started this. But you're kind of creepy. But.

The leader throws two punches. I avoided that and punched him in the stomach as hard as I could.

I held my stomach and folded my waist so my face was in a good position.

I'm going to hit you there.

Ouch! It hurts! Your face is really hard.

The leader got a nosebleed and looks like he is in pain. But,

“Alright, this is my win!.....Can you go home already?”

“Tch!”

Four of them left without much resistance.

“I was surprised.....Kouyou is strong at fighting, huh. Then the thing about not being in a fight before was a lie then. It’s unexpected.....”

“No, I really haven’t been in a fight before though?”

“Eh? Then why?”

“There was a time when I longed for strength. I was wondering what strength was. When I was thinking about it, I just happened to see Bruce Lee on TV, and I thought, ‘That’s it!’. So I started doing Jeet Kune Do.”

“Hee.....”

“Well, it became a pain in the ass and I quit after three days.”

“Eh!”

“I was in the first grade when I joined the school for that. During the time I joined the school, I beat the strongest one who was at the third grade at the time. I already got strong enough, well then—! Is what I thought at the time.”

“Is, is that so.....”

“Come on, let’s get this leaflet distribution thing over with, shall we?”

“Yeah, you’re right!”

Having said that, I gave most of the leaflets to Rekizuki.

In spite of this, the ending time was almost the same.

I’m never going to hand out leaflets again.

Chapter 33

The festival will be held from next Friday to Sunday. Today is Saturday, which means there is only one week left. The decorations are already pretty much ready, and I’ve got the recipe from the manager.

Well then, I wonder what I should do today.

It’s a date. Koyomi invited me to one, first she’s going to get me to cut my hair. And in addition to that, she said she would like me to wear contact lenses until the school festival ends.

We have already reserved a place, so we will be shopping until then. For now we are going to go buy some clothes.

“Koyomi—?”

“What’s the matter?”

“The time, when should we start going?”

“Umm, let’s see……we have around 1 hour and 30 minutes left.”

“I see. Thank you.”

“Un!”

Around 1 hour and 30 minutes huh……

It’s pretty close to this shopping centre so I guess it’s okay.

“Hey—hey—! Look here, which one do you think is good?”

“Nn—…….”

What Koyomi was showing was a jacket, she was lost as to whether she should choose the black or the white one.

“Why don’t you buy both?”

“But you are treating me for this.”

The expenses incurred during the date was paid by me every single time. At first Koyomi tried to stop me, but lately that has decreased.

It would be bad if I were to ask her to pay for it this time, and I have extra money along with savings anyways. So I said that I will be paying this time as well.

Changing my mind after saying I will treat her would be pathetic after all.....

Although because of that, Koyomi seemed like she was trying to be considerate.

“I told you to stop being so reserved, right? Many times in fact.”

“After all, the price this time is different.....”

“This time too regarding the haircut, even though I didn’t say anything you went out of your way to arrange it right? I was always in your care, so take this as my gratitude.”

“Bu, but.....”

“Alright I understand. Then why don’t Koyomi pick what she likes? I’ll buy the other one as a gift.”

“Then isn’t that the same!”

“It’s completely different. Buying a gift and treating someone to something is completely different. In the first place, you were always giving me something, and I haven’t gave you anything in return.....You don’t need to worry about it.”

“Nn, Un.....Thank you.....”

“Nn.....”

“What about Kouyou..... you won’t buy some clothes?”

“Nn—, I’m fine for today I guess? I don’t particularly want anything.”

“I see.....”

“Well even so, we came all the way here, if Koyomi is going to pick for me then I will buy it!”

“Rea, really!?”

“Un. For real.”

“I see.....Then! I’ll buy it and give it to you!”

“Fine, but only one okay. The rest I’ll buy it myself.”

“.....Okay.”

“Then, choose a cool one, okay. I’ll count on you Koyomi.”

“U, un!”

And like this, my coordination began.

Koyomi looks like she's having fun when she says that this fits me—!

Shopping might surprisingly not be a bad idea either.....

Lately I feel as if I'm starting to enjoy Koyomi's company more.

It was a feeling that I never had before. I still don't know whether these feelings are of a romantic sort or not though.

Even so, I feel like it might be closer to anything I've felt before.

I feel like we're going outside the border of friends and going into seeing each other as the opposite sex.

Fufu.....I'm surprisingly simple.....

I can't really speak for others.....

I couldn't help but smile.

I guess I'm going to tease her a little bit.....

“Koyomi!”

“Nn?”

She stopped picking the clothes after hearing my voice, and she looked over here.

“It’s fun.”

“Hmm?”

“It’s fun being together with Koyomi.”

“Hmm?.....Ah.....Eh.....A, Ahhh.....”

“Fufufu.....Why are you making such a dumbfounded face. That’s the only thing that I want to say, so let’s choose quickly.”

“Eh, Ah, Un.....Th-, thanks.....”

“Un.....me too.”

“Tsu.....!”

And while we were choosing our clothes after that, Koyomi’s face was beet red.

Really.....Me too.....

I thought from the bottom of my heart.

Koyomi, thank you.....

I thought that when I was looking at Koyomi's profile while we were on our way to the beauty parlor.

Author's Note:

I wonder if Kouyou is the type that properly says what he wants to?

This is the Kouyou that has the most dere at this point in time.

Chapter 34

"Co-, cool....."

"Yes, yes, I know, I know. Thank you"

"Eh—, isn't your response a little too dim? You could have been more embarrassed you know....."

"After all, I already know it—"

My face could be considered as a handsome one just barely but, the eyes are pretty important so depending on the hairstyle it can deviate quite a bit.

Although I don't think she will react that way if she has gotten used to seeing Akira, I guess this is from the point of view of a lover.

"But, it's really cool you know!"

“.....Thank you”

“Un!”

“Ah, will you come today too? To my house.”

“If I could come then I would like to.....”

“You are free to do as you wish.”

“Yay!”

Koyomi’s parents don’t usually go home until late at night, so when we went on a date during a day off she would eat a meal in my house before going home.

We weren’t doing anything that would make us feel guilty so don’t worry.

“Fuu.....it’s finally here.....”

I was carrying the slightly heavy ingredients for dinner.

-Ka-cha

“Hmm? The door is unlocked.....why?”

“Did you forget to lock it?”

“That shouldn’t be possible……Geh……!”

I opened the door, and when I looked at the entrance, a pair of shoes that shouldn’t be there was there.

I have a bad feeling.

“Koyomi, I’m sorry……Go home for today.”

“Eh? Why?”

“Qui, quickly……Sorry, please go home.”

“Eh? Nn……I got it……”

“I’m sorry……”

Alright, with this……
The moment I was relieved.

“Ah! Kou-chan! So you have returned!”

“Kou-chan?”

When Koyomi heard that voice, she turned around and looked inside the house.

“Ara? Who is that girl Kou-chan?”

“Eh, Etto.....”

“Nn?....Aah, did I surprise you? I’m Kouyou’s mother, Konoha Shimura. Nice to meet you. How about you? Could it be that you are his girlfriend~?”

Yes, this person is my mother.

My mother is young, or rather her face is. To be frank she is quite beautiful. A beauty that doesn’t lose to Koyomi’s

Then why am I not good-looking too?

That is simple. It’s because my father has a pretty average appearance. Perhaps around 49?

They are apparently childhood friends.

Anyways, my mom has that kind of atmosphere, Koyomi has also become quite nervous.

“Eh, Etto! I, I am....Kouyou-kun’s girlfriend, Tachibana Koyomi! It’s, it’s nice to meet you too!”

“Ara ara, you don’t have to be so formal. Hee—”

“What is it.....”

“She is cute right~, Kou-chan?”

“Yes yes. Rather than that, why are you here now.....isn’t it supposed to be tomorrow?”

“But if I come tomorrow, I might meet that person right?”

“Haah.....won’t you just make up already?”

“That is impossible. Rather than that, come on, why don’t you two come in?”

“Etto....., is it okay if I intrude?”

“It’s fine.....when I think about it again, it would be found out sooner or later anyway.....”

“I, I see.”

After that, we sat in the living room while my mom talked endlessly about my past, with Koyomi listening to her with amusement, and we talked all about why Koyomi was here.

I'm starting to get hungry, so I stood up to start preparing the meal.

"Ah, wait! I'll make it today."

"Eh? It's fine....."

"No, I'll do it"

"But....."

"I'll make it! The food you make is similar to him after all."

"Ahaha.....Suit yourself...."

And like that, she headed to the kitchen with a ruffled mood.

"What does she mean? When she said about your cooking being similar to that person?"

"I told you that they don't get along right?"

"Un."

“I, my father taught me how to cook, there’s also the fact that our taste buds are similar since he is my father.....but I don’t think she want to eat it because they are on bad terms.”

“Eh.....It’s that bad?”

“Yeah. But I think she has another reason too.”

“Another reason?”

“Maybe she will miss him after she ate it since they’ve known each other since childhood and has eaten together countless times.....Even if she lied to herself, her body is honest or something like that? Once she ate it, I don’t think she can bear the loneliness.”

“Hee.....it sounds kind of lovely.”

“It’s troublesome that they aren’t honest right?”

“Eh.....Ahaha.....”

As one would expect, Koyomi showed a strained laugh, trying to not directly touch on the topic.

And after that,

“Alright, it’s done—!”

“Th, thank you very much!”

“Thanks.”

Thus began the dinner party between me, Koyomi and my mother.

Chapter 35

My mother’s cooking was lined up at the dinner table. For a while, Rekizuki raved about the food, but when he had eaten about half of it, Mom opened her mouth with a grin.

“Hey—hey—, who is the one who confessed?”

“M-, it’s me.”

“Hee—, what does Koyomi-chan like about him?”

“Eh, etto.....I like how he’s untalkative and cold but at the same time having a strong sense of self along with his straightforwardness.”

How could you say that without shame. Even though it’s a punishment game.

“Ara, is that how it is! I’m happy~! That I got another new daughter that is.”

“Another?”

“Ara, you don’t know about it?”

My mother glared at me a little bit.

“Aah, I’m sorry Koyomi. I, have a younger sister.”

“Eh—! That was a shock.....”

“I think I told Akira about this but, it’s not something important so I didn’t tell you.”

“I’ll cry if you say that your real sister is trivial you know?”

“I didn’t say that though.....”

“Your sister huh.....It would be nice if I could meet her.”

“I was planning on taking her to the school cultural festival so you can meet her.”

“Is that true! Hooray—!”

“Fufufu.....or rather, Koyomi-chan?”

Koyomi, who was basked in joy, was brought back to reality by my mother with a mischievous look.

“Ye, yes?”

“So you didn’t deny the part about you becoming my daughter?”

“Ah, no, that is....umm.....I would be happy if I could become your daughter... ”

She answered while her face was bright-red.

“And yet you still replied? Isn’t it usually embarrassing? Koyomi-chan’s personality is also not like Kouyou’s.....Maybe that’s what you’ve been fantasizing about.....?”

“Tsu.....!.....Ah, no.....That is,.....”

“Ara, did I hit the mark? You’re so cute~!”

“Tsu.....!”

Probably because Koyomi’s reaction was entertaining to look at, my mother attacked more and more.

Koyomi’s face became quite red.

“.....Haahh.....Mother. I think it’s time to stop.....”

“Fufu, that’s true. I might have overdone it. I’m sorry, okay Koyomi-chan?”

“Ah, not at all. Umm....can I ask 1 question?”

“You can ask anything.”

“Konoha-san.....”

“That’s no good alright, Koyomi-chan? You should properly call me your mother-in-law.”

“Ah, I’m sorry, mother-in-law.”

“It’s fine, you’re my daughter after all.”

I wonder why this progressed so naturally without my permission, did I promise to marry her?

Or rather, how did Koyomi adapt so quickly as if it’s natural.

Is it because of her fantasies? Did her fantasies evolved so much she didn’t feel shy anymore?

You’re pretty good.

“Why does mother-in-law have Shimura as the last name? I was told that you weren’t divorced.....I’m sorry. I was a little interested.....”

Uwah, that’s quite a step.

“Nn—? I wasn’t particularly divorced though? After all, won’t it be pitiful for the children? But I don’t want to have Kiyama as my name. To have the same family name as him. I don’t like it when my name differs with my child though~!”

“Ahaha, to that extent.....”

“Right right. That person is already the lowest after all!”

And she talked about how bad Father was after that.

How he’s goofy with young women, those kinds of things.

Koyomi and I don’t particularly have any interest in that topic so we couldn’t remember the contents of the talk as we didn’t really pay attention to it.

And accordingly, when she was talking, she saw my face as if she just remembered, stopped her rant and began talking about me.

“By the way, Kou-chan. What’s with that face?”

“Aah, this is the image-change that was forcefully forced on me for the school cultural festival.”

“Image change? This is? It wasn’t so different from when you were in middle school though?”

“Eh?Middle school?”

“That’s right. Could it be that you don’t know?”

“No, not at all.....”

“He’s making his high school debut in reverse. He started wearing glasses and growing his hair out in high school.”

“Eh—! Is that true!”

“Yeah.....that reminds me, why did Kou-chan say OK to your confession? Could it be that he said he wanted to know about what kind of existence a girlfriend is?”

“Eh, Ah.....he mentioned that.”

“As I thought.....So he is still saying that kind of stuff?”

“If you say anything more than that I’ll really be angry you know?”

This is bad, my past is being leaked to Koyomi

My dark history.....!

“Ah, I want to hear it!”

“Ara, if my daughter said she want to hear it then I have no choice but to do so right~?”

Curse you Koyomiiiiii!
My glare was completely useless.

Aah, it's over..... It's very embarrassing.

“This child you see, do you know why he has that kind of personality?”

“Ah, I've heard about that. Something about imitating his favorite character.....”

“That's right.....what happens next is more interesting..... and you see? He has a cheerful personality to begin with, and although he doesn't talk much, he's not a bad talker, and he's usually very interesting to talk to.”

“That, I understand.”

“His hair was also about as short as it is now, and he also wore contacts. He didn't give off the do not talk to me aura so he has plenty of bright friends you see. Are they called the cheerful characters now? And many of them would come to do a sleepover.”

“Hee.....Just like Shizuku?”

“Well, I think it's close enough.”

“He was popular with the girls because he had a good-looking face and his cool nature. He was even the best in her class.”

“Eh!”

“They thought his calm and adult feeling is cool—.That’s why you got chocolates in the double digit right?”

“Half of them were obligation chocolates.”

“But the other half was the True Feeling one right?”

“.....Well.”

“Eh, to that extent.....”

“Yes, that’s right. Well the character he admired is in the scum category of characters so I guess this kid has a pretty bad personality since he definitely won’t eat the homemade ones.”

“But it’s scary.”

“He also got confessed to by girls pretty often you know? This kid. Surprisingly unexpected right?”

“It, it’s true that it’s surprising.....but it also somehow made sense.”

“Fufufu, ara is that so.....well he rejected all of them though. He said that he wasn’t interested in those kind of things.”

“Hee.....”

“And do you know what happened after that?.....This kid fell in love with a girl at first sight.”

“Eh!?”

“Mother.....”

“And after that you see, he confessed to her and they went out.”

“No way.....”

“Mother.....”

No, do people usually talk about someone’s former girlfriend in front of his current girlfriend?

Or rather, I would really like it if you could stop talking about that.

That’s my biggest black history.

“He had a girlfriend.....?”

“I just didn’t mention it.....”

“Ah! I’m sorry! I’m not telling Koyomi-chan this to give you a hard time, okay?
It’s just an interesting story.”

“Eh, Ahh, really?”

“That’s right! Koyomi will definitely laugh too.”

“Mother! You really shouldn’t say any more than that.....”

“What should we do Koyomi-chan?”

“I more or less want to hear it...”

“Yosh! I got it! And then you see? He said he’d be happy to go out with her, but he didn’t know what to do with her afterwards. Why don’t you go on a date? Is what was suggested but he said “It’s a pain, that’s not what we’re into” trying to sound cool.”

“.....I wasn’t particularly trying to be cool though.....”

“Ara? Is that so? “I don’t think we like that kind of childish thing” is what you said right while trying to act like an adult?”

“.....”

That’s true. I did say that.

I’ve had a lot of adolescent angst.

In my case, it just happened to match my original personality and it felt like I was an adult.

“And after that, one month passed by without them doing anything, his girlfriend also invited him several times but he always refused. And then he was dumped saying she didn’t expect him to be like this~. She didn’t go out with him because she liked him, but because she didn’t have any reason to refuse, like junior high school students tend to be.”

“And how was Kouyou after that?”

“And then he started to say that he didn’t understand what dating meant in the first place. Maybe Kou-chan didn’t like her that much. Maybe he just thought she was cute. I don’t really care about the reason for liking her but I don’t think Kouyou wanted to go out with her because he liked her but rather the opposite. He wanted to know how it feels to go out which is why he said he liked her. Normally, after a relationship, you would feel possessive, but Kou-chan doesn’t have that in his personality, so I guess he got cold feet.....”

“Hee.....”

“Well, after that I just don’t really know what the existence called lovers is. They say the world looks different when you fall in love, but it doesn’t really feel different at all. Is what he said.”

“I see, and because of that.....”

“Right? Isn’t it funny how he sulks?”

“That’s true.....it’s a little interesting.....”

“Right—!”

Haahh.....

Everything was leaked.

It’s already bad enough that I’m sulking while acting like an adult, and then getting dumped and becoming enlightened. It’s so embarrassing.

“Come to think of it, since when have you two started dating?”

“Around 2 months ago.”

“Hmm.....why do you confess?”

“Eh? Umm that is.”

“Won’t you tell me what really happened? This kid is serious in an odd way so he wouldn’t say yes to something he doesn’t like. I know that much, he’s my child after all.”

“E.....tto.”

“It’s okay.....I won’t get angry.....”

“No, that’s not it.....”

Mom says it in a gentle tone, but Koyomi probably doesn’t understand. She’s in quite a hurry. She’s probably thinking that she won’t be recognized or something.

“Mother, do you really need to hear about that?”

“Ara, do you not want to say it?”

“I don’t really want to talk about it too much”

“Nn—, but in the end I’m still interested.”

There’s no helping it.

Well, my mother is not the type to worry about those sort of things, so it should be fine.

“Then I’ll say it. Is that fine?”

“It’s fine. I’m just interested in the reason after all.”

And then I talked about it. About the punishment game. About the 1 month period. And about the fact that I think I want to fall in love with Koyomi.

“Hee..... that was a pretty racy decision, dear.”

“Nn, is that so?”

“Hey, Koyomi-chan?”

Koyomi’s eyes were teary and she was clearly frightened.

“Didn’t I say it? It doesn’t really matter what your reason for liking someone is. Kou-chan probably thinks so too. I’m glad that you falsely confessed to him. After all because of that I got a cute daughter!”

“Re, really.....? Kouyou.....is glad.....?”

“Un, very.”

“.....Thank you.”

Koyomi started crying.

She stopped crying rather quickly after I hugged her and stroked her head.

My mother looked like she was enjoying looking at that scene.

“Ara ara, it’s so steamy here.”

“Yes yes.”

“Fufufu.....Then? Have you fallen in love with her?”

“Nn—? Not yet I guess.....but it’s fun and indispensable to me.....”

“Tsu.....!”

“Ara, you’re bright red?”

Koyomi turned bright red once more.

So after this, they forgot about me and continued their girls’ night out.

Koyomi’s face would often turn red during their conversation.

Chapter 36

(Koyomi’s POV)

On the day I met my mother-in-law, we disbanded since it was getting late and it became so that Kouyou was going to send me home.

“Mother-in-law is such an interesting person!”

“Is that so? I don’t really understand. Well even so, that’s because my father isn’t here. The two of them together would be a huge pain in the ass.”

“Father-in-law huh.....I want to meet him.”

“You called him that so naturally huh.”

“Ehehe, it’s because I’m used to it.”

“In your fantasies? That’s somewhat disagreeable.”

“Muu—! Isn’t it fine.....”

“I wasn’t saying it’s bad you know.”

“But it’s been a long time since I’ve eaten with an adult woman like this so it was fun!”

“Hee—, good for you.”

“Mu, your response is as weak as usual.”

“That’s not true.....In the first place, she said it herself right? Mother-in-law. If there’s some free time then feel free to invite her. You can come alone with mother and with me. Or even just me is fine.”

“I, I see.....Th, thank you.....”

“Nn.....”

It’s not fair because you say these things that I want you to say without thinking about it.

Maybe that’s why you were popular in middle school.....

I don’t really like it.....

“Hey.....”

“Nn? What’s the matter?”

“That,about that, you are going to school tomorrow since you already got your haircut along with the contact lense right?”

“Well, I was told to do so. By you”

“Bu-, but! It’s okay to not change your atmoshere.....”

“?.....What do you mean?”

“Just like before, it’s fine to emit the don’t talk to me aura.”

“Hmm. To Koyomi too?”

“Not for me!”

“Alright alright. I get it. I’m not going to be swayed by anyone, don’t worry. Mostly, do you think I’ll be popular when Akira and the others are around?”

“You, you will.....”

“Thanks”

Uu.....I said it.....

I mean, I’m worried! It can’t be helped!

But he’s kind. Haah.....I like him....

Lately because Kouyou have gotten softer, instead of falling in love with me, he made me fall further in love with him.

I’m in a dilemma.

Furthermore if I ask won’t he keep his distance?

“Ca-, can I ask one more thing?”

“It’s fine but—?”

“Do you have any?”

“What thing?”

“Do you have any lingering feelings for your former girlfriend.....”

“Aah, that matter.....not at all. I told you right? Going out was more of a goal rather than me liking her.....I don’t know now. Besides you should just think of it of a funny story.”

“U, Un.....I understand.....but I’m still worried about it.....I’m sorry? It’s heavy right...Even though it’s only temporary.....”

“Isn’t it a normal thing to be worried about? To be worried about someone’s former girlfriend. And even if you say temporary, that’s not much different you know. It’s just that my awareness and your reasons are different. It’s true that Koyomi likes me, and we are dating. You don’t really have to worry about it. You can ask me anything if you’re worried. I’ll answer everything I can.”

“.....Thank you.....”

U, uu.....he’s too kind.....you’re so cool...

This is a bad idea. This is the kind of things that will make me fall in love further.

The proof is in the fake Kansai dialect.

Haa.....I had a really good time today.....

“Hey, Kouyou?”

“Nn—?”

“Was today fun? Being with me and not just the playing around.....”

“Fufu.....It was very fun. Thank you for staying with me. ”

“Ehehe.....Me too!”

And I hugged Kouyou’s arm after saying that.

They are very close together, and my chest hits my arm, but it doesn’t matter. It doesn’t matter.

“It’s hard to walk.”

“Isn’t it fine.....wi-, I’m your bride after all..... ”

My face gets a little bit hot. It’s probably read now....

“Like I say, if you are going to be embarrassed then you don’t have to force yourself to say it.....How many times has this happened?”

“I told you, I’m not red!”

“Yes yes.....”

After that I walked home like that while still holding on to his arm.

Even though I was the one hugging him, I felt as if my whole body was wrapped up in his warmth, a feeling of happiness that was hard to describe envelops me.

I guess I couldn't stop grinning, and Kouyou told me I was weird more than once.

And so I arrived home, and our date for the day was over.

『Thank you for today! It was really fun!』

『Un.』

Ufufu, with RINE, the response is less than when you meet in person.

『Are we going to play tomorrow too?』

『I'm sorry, my father is coming tomorrow so.....』

『Ah, I see! It's okay, you don't have to worry about it.』

『We can at least have dinner together. What will you do?』

『Please let me eat dinner together with you!』

Hooray—! Two days in a row………!

『Then is it okay if I come to Koyomi's house tomorrow?』

『Eh? We aren't going to your house?』

『Both of them are probably going to fight tomorrow, and this is not the time for that.』

『Ah, I see………』

『Is that not okay?』

『Uun, I'm looking forward to it.』

Kouyou's going to come to my house tomorrow!

I, I have to clean my room.

And, and then…… 「Your room is beautiful」 「Is that so?」 「But Koyomi is more beautiful.」 「Ehh !」

Is what I'd hope to happen, and then………Kya—!!

I even said that cooking was our first joint effort.

「It's like we're married.」 – 「Yeah, we are.」

「Do you think we could just live together and get married?」 「What? No,
.....」 「All right, let's do some prep work! 」 「Ehh!」

Uhehe.....I think I'm going to drool.

Aha.....Can't tomorrow come faster—?

It was a happy night with my prided fantasy.

Chapter 37

Author's Note:

This is completely unrelated but, It's amazing how hard it is to find a punchline for each story.

—— Bing-bong

My father has arrived.

It's finally here.....the depressing part. I mean, we're about to see a romantic comedy cross paths right before our eyes!

-Ka-ching

“Yosh! Kouyou, how have you been doing?”

“Un, long time no meet Father.”

“Ou ou, I’ll be intruding~!”

He entered the room as he said that.

I also locked the door and chased after him right after.

“Yo—! Konoha! Long time no meet—! Are you well?”

“Eeh, it’s been a long time, Shigeru.”

My father’s name is Kiyama Shigeru.

He doesn’t have any particularly unique trait, but he seemed to be called a genius since back in the days. I heard that I’m smart like my mother but my father could do most things without much effort.

Both of them called each other by their names.

“You don’t seem very lively—!”

“That’s because you are here.”

U—n. Why are they so hostile to each other.....

This was basically due to my mother who’s not being honest.

“Is that so? The truth is that you are lonely right? Nn?”

“Haahh.....There’s no way that’s true.”

“But I’m lonely. Even now I’m very happy when I get to meet you.”

“Tsu!.....Eh, No, that.....”

And my mother is also fundamentally simple.

“No.....that.....the truth is I am.....lonely too, so I’m happy.....”

“Guhaha! You were pulled in! I see, I see, so you were that happy—!”

“Tsu.....! Sc, you scum.....I’ll kill you!”

But it’s Father’s bad habit to make Mother in a good mood and to suddenly bring it down on his own.

They are truly bothersome parents indeed.

“Ah, leaving that aside, I brought the recipe.”

“Ah, thank you.”

“Aah, Aahh...here mine too.”

“Thanks.”

After that, the couple fought with each other.

First of all, it seemed like Mother and Father will be going home the day after tomorrow.

Tomorrow we will have our first family dinner together in a long time.

Mother told Father about Koyomi and he’s been teasing me all day since then.

◇◇◇◇◇

“Fuaahh.....”

“Yosh! Good morning! Eh Kouyou!?”

“Nn? What’s the matter, Akira?”

“Yo, you, your hair...and the contacts.....”

“Nn? I didn’t mention it? Koyomi made me do this.”

“Eh, Eeeh.....your impression feels different.....”

“Yes, yes. Thank you.”

“I haven’t complimented you yet.”

“You were going to compliment me anyways right? You look good in that! Or something along those lines.”

“Well, yes, but you’re still a hard man to mess with like usual.”

“I’m sorry about that...Ah, Koyomi good morning.”

“U, Un! Good morning...”

She clearly had a face like she wanted to say something to me so I called out to her.

It’s not like cutting my hair and getting contacts changed anything. I took my seat as usual.

Yeah, I’m the one who hasn’t changed, so of course people will look at me differently.

“Eh—! So you did an image change Kouyou!”

“Umu, that suits you!”

“That’s nice~It fits you! It’s unexpectedly cool~”

“Yes, yes. Thank you, thank you.”

“Ahaha, your reaction is as weak as usual—. I’m relieved!”

“He—he—”

Why are you relieved? I don’t really understand.

“Eh—! Are you Kiyama-kun!? That’s cool!”

“Yeah!”

“You’re smart, you’re fast, you look athletic, you’re handsome, and you’re cool!”

Uwaa, the girl’s impression of me was the same as the one during middle school.

“Hey—hey—, let’s go play next time!”

“UnUn! Is it a no?”

It’s not as if I can’t, but I don’t particularly have any reason to say OK.

Or rather.....

“No, I would rather not do that.”

“Eh—, why—?”

“That’s because I’m glared at. By Koyomi. The whole time.”

Yes, I’ve been glared at by Koyomi since the girls in the class started talking to me.
No, since Yumekawa said I’m cool.

A black aura began to flow out when the girls started asking me to go out to play
just now.

“Eh, Ah!”

“Mmm-hmm! What do you want with my boyfriend?”

She coughs deliberately and then says that while emphasizing the boyfriend part.

“Ah, so you were still dating each other....”

“Nn? What do you mean? You think I broke up with Kouyou?”

“Do, don’t be that angry.....There was a rumour about it being a punishment
game so I thought you already broke up with him since you don’t like him.....”

“No, no that is.....I like him properly, and I have no intention of breaking up!”

“Ah, aah.....sorry. I shouldn’t have believed the rumors so easily, right? I’m sorry.”

“No, it’s fine.....you don’t have to apologize.....”

Well, it’s the truth after all.....

However, it’s probably true that this is a self-serving rumor.

It’s probably just a self-proclaimed detective who’s so jealous that he disbelieves that she’s dating a shady guy like me that he came to that conclusion on his own. I think it’s okay to be angry, though.

“I don’t care if it’s a punishment game or not, we’re still lovers, and we haven’t broken up. Don’t believe too much of it, okay? Rumors like that.”

“Ah, Un. I’m sorry.”

After saying that, the girls went back to their seats.

“Th, thank you.....”

“I told you the day before yesterday. I think you should be more confident about being my lover. At the very least I won’t be deterred by it.”

“Tsu!.....Un!”

Nn—, I can’t really continue the conversation.....

I mean, my parent’s situation are more of a romantic comedy.

Chapter 38

There is a three-day cultural festival starting from Friday.

Cleanup will be done on Monday while Tuesday is our break, Wednesday and Thursday will then be our substitute national holiday.

By the way, the prize for winning is a 3 days 2 nights class trip from Wednesday to Friday. That’s awesome right.

There is a post-festival party on the last day of the festival, but there is apparently no legends of some sort. However, I heard that couples dance together. I was also invited by Koyomi.

And so, today is Wednesday, two days before the festival.

Pamphlets were handed out, and each and every single one of them described what kind of project it would be.

“Oh—! There’s even a common public confession!””

“Eh—! Really!? Why don’t you do it Kouyou—”

“I definitely won’t do it.”

“Che, cheapskate—!”

“Yes, yes.”

“O—i! Boys—! The preparations are complete—!”

“Oh, finally huh. Let’s go Kouyou.”

“Haah.....”

“What is it? You still haven’t given up yet?”

“No.....It’s enough.....”

We’re about to try on the butler’s uniform for the school festival. The boys will change first, followed by the girls.

By the way, the group in charge of the cooking group is still training even now.

“Uooh! That fits you, Kouyou!”

“Isn’t that kind of girlie banter annoying?”

“You’re so cold—”

“Isn’t that only right. Or rather, Akira definitely looks good in it, but Manamoto also looks good in that uniform. As expected, it’s because of his good physique.”

“I’m not sure..... Oh, that’s right,..... looks good on you. But then again, Kouyou is surprisingly sturdy too!”

“Well, I’m working out after all.”

“Yosh! Has everyone worn their uniforms?”

“Yes—!”

“Well then, let’s make our debut—!”

We opened the door from the class next door, which was partitioned, and entered our class.

“” ” Kyaa—!!””””

Yes, yes, here it is.

A guy from another class came all the way to this classroom to observe after hearing the story.

I know that it’s a little bit crazy, I’m sure you’ll be happy to know that I’m using this as bait to win the festival.

“Akira-kun is so cool—!”

“But the one who dresses up more stylishly is Manamoto!”

“Akita-kun too—!”

And something of that sort, they complimented the members of Kami7 immediately.

Of course the other students were mentioned, but the ones who seemed to receive the most compliments are Akira and Manamoto. Akita is pretty popular too.

Me? I’m just looking at them from the corner silently.

Koyomi doesn’t seem to notice that the visitors are blocking the way.

“Nn? Hey, look at that! There was someone like that in that class?”

“Eh! It’s true!”

“He seems to be a cool and calm type, and an ikemen with robust body too!”

“Co-, cool!”

Uwah.....

I was noticed.

What I don’t like about this is the fact that it will make Koyomi angry again.....

“Ou ou! You’re famous.”

“Stop it, don’t come over here Akira. You’ll draw attention to me too.”

“Isn’t attention a good thing for us right now! Let’s aim for victory! There’s no problem with the taste too!”

“” Kyaa—!””

“Two handsome guy, this can become a good picture!”

“Akira-kun looks like he have someone he is going out with, how about that person?”

“Doesn’t he seem like the type that doesn’t want one since he’s not interested in it?”

“Really? Should I give it a try? I’ll try to talk to him!”

“Ah! Me too!”

Don’t be so loud. I heard everything you know.

Some visitors and girls from other class is starting to come over here.

“Hey—hey—! What’s your name!?”

“Do you use RINE!?”

“Do you have a girlfriend!? What’s your favorite type!?”

“No, I’m.....”

It’s no use.....

I can’t answer the barrage of questions.

Gradually the distance begins to close, and their body starts touching me.

This is bad, if this keeps going on then it’s going to be very problematic.

“Hey—hey—!”

“Ah—! My • boy • friend’s • clothes • Kouyou • , fits you well!”

U, Uwahh.....

She purposely did that with a loud voice, while emphasizing my boyfriend Kouyou, she hugged my body from the sides.

She is completely angry. This is bad. This is going to be troublesome.

“Eh, Tachibana-san’s boyfriend.....?”

“So, so that’s it.....”

“I’m sorry Tachibana-san! I didn’t know…….”

“Uun, you don’t have to worry about it…….”

Everyone dissolved once she said that,

But, Akira has a complaint for Koyomi.

“Oi, oioi Koyomi—! I told you that you shouldn’t say that right?”

“Bu, but…….”

“It’s easier for customers to come to you if you look like you’re free rather than if you have a girlfriend!”

“Bu, but……they were touching each other……Even though I can’t really touch him…….”

“What are you talking about, the person who is currently hugging his arm and rubbing her face against his shoulder? You’re the one who recommended Kouyou to play the butler. I asked him to play the butler because I wanted to see it too, so you have to put up with that. ……”

“U. Uuu……I’m sorry.”

“Well it’s fine……only a fraction of the other classes were here anyways.”

“Thank you…….”

Koyomi seemed to be trying to properly reflect,

“Hey.....Kouyou?”

“Nn? What’s the matter?”

“Co-, you’re so cool.....Number 1.....”

“Fufufu.....Thank you—”

“Mo, Mou! I’m not joking!”

“I know...”

“Does that mean.....”

“?”

“I’m anxious. I’m jealous. That’s why.....keep your guard up with everyone else but me.....please be truly cool only in front of me.....”

“OK OK, I got it.”

“I see.....I’m glad.....”

“Oi! The ones over there! It’s fine if you want to flirt but, girls should get dressed soon!”

“Tsu!Flirting.....Fuheh.....”

“No, it’s not like that. Stop trying to poke fun at us at every single chance you get.”

“The difference in enthusiasm! The gap in both of your reactions are amazing!”

Thanks to being that happy due to the people on the surroundings saying that we are flirting, Koyomi went off somewhere.

“Oi!” Firmly

“Ouch.....Ah, it’s real....”

“The preparations are almost finished. Come on, let’s go.”

“Ah, Un!”

After saying that, I walked quickly to the door. Before I opened the door, she turned around and said something with a big smile on her face.

“Look forward to it okay! I’m going to be exceptionally cute just for Kouyou after all!”

“Un, I’m looking forward to it.”

Koyomi entered the neighbouring classroom

“Curse you Kiyamaa!”

“I’m envious………I’ll destroy you!”

“It will all be over when I kill you!”

A boy whose mind has been manipulated by jealousy lamented behind me.

Like I said, I could hear you.

After a while, I heard a voice from the next class saying, “Did you change your clothes?” And some other voices.

It looks like they are done. The door opens and the girls came in.

“” Oohhh—!””

The boys cheer just like before. Of course, there are guys from other classes too.

In the midst of all this, Yumekawa started to approach us and began to whisper in a small voice.

“Kouyou should go to the next classroom.”

“Why?”

“It’s fine, just go already!”

“Well, it’s fine but.....who is there?”

“I wonder?”

I can sort of imagine it, but just in case, I go into the next classroom.

The classroom is divided in half by a curtain, and I hear a voice from behind the curtain. It’s Koyomi.

“Kouyou, is that you?”

“Un.”

“I see, then can you come here?”

“Okay.”

I moved the curtain and went inside.

Inside stood Koyomi, dressed as a maid.

Yes, it's a normal maid's outfit. It's a very casual outfit and the skirt is short, but the pants are the perfect length so you can't see them.

It looks really good on her, and she's simply so cute.

Koyomi is blushing while fidgeting shyly. That expression somehow tickles a man's heart. It's very good.

“Ho, how is it?”

“It fits you, it's so pretty. You're the best women that I've ever seen.”

“Cu, cu-cu-cu-cute.....the
best.....Fu~nya.....Fuheh.....Fufufu.....Hohaah.”

“Why is Koyomi the only one here?”

“Funya?.....Hah!.....E, etto, I, umm, it draws attention right?”

“Nn, We-, well.....”

“If it's the day of the event, I'll put up with it. But until then, I'd rather just show it to Kouyou.....”

“Hmm. Isn’t that a little sneaky?”

“We-, well, I got permission from all the girls in my class so.....”

“I see.....Un, you’re cute.”

“Thank you.....”

“.....”

“.....”

“.....Look here.....”

“Nn?”

“Can we dance in this outfit during the after-party?”

“A maid and a butler outfit? I think it should be fine.”

“Thank you.....”

“Then, I’ll be going soon,”

Just as I was about to leave, a voice called out from behind me.

“Wait!”

“Nn? What’s the matter?”

“I told you not to worry too much about whether this is a real or a temporary one right?”

“Un, you said that.”

“Then.....if, if we could win the overall victory during the cultural festival.....can we go on a trip with both of us together?”

“It’s fine though?”

“No, no.....that’s not it.....”

“?”

“At....that time.....Can we.....kiss?”

“Kiss?”

“Wow, I know, but that’s a farfetched reason, and it doesn’t think of Kouyou’s feeling..... butI’ve always wanted to try it.....No?”

“I still haven’t.....”

“That’s still fine....That’s why, can you think about it a little? That’s all.....The conversation is over.”

“Nn. Un.....I got it.....”

I walked out of there and went back to the classroom.

Akira approached me and said something, but I couldn’t really hear it.

Kiss....huh.....

As I thought, I still haven’t fall for Koyomi yet.

But, it’s different from before too.

And if Koyomi say she wanted to do that.....

But.....

That day, I kept thinking over and over again, but I couldn’t find an answer.

Chapter 39

“Hehe.....Are you serious?”

“Isn’t that obvious? Now that we’re reunited, let’s get a taste of what’s to come.”

An abandoned warehouse that is no longer in use.

I still didn’t know that there was an ominous atmosphere at that time.

◇◇◇◇◇

Today is Friday. The first day of the long-awaited cultural festival.
It’s going to start at 9 am. We still have around one more hour to go.

“Yosh! Have everyone changed!?”

“Yeah—!”

For now, it seems like everyone has finished changing.

“Are the ingredients enough—!?”

“I’m buying in excess!”

“Yosh! Well then everyone! Do your best—!”

“” Yeah—!!””

The overall victory huh.....

“I hope we can win! Kouyou!”

“That’s right, good luck.”

“Ufufu, Un!”

And like that, the curtain was opened to our school cultural festival.

“Won’t you come to our class—?”

“Butlers for the women and maids for the men. The food we serve is also of the highest quality. If you’re interested then we’d like to have you!”

Pulling the customers is the first step. We decided that we should create a buzz for the time being, so we delayed opening the store for half an hour and picked up girls all over the school during that time.

If the people who are interested in it line up in front of the classroom, our place will look as if it’s good which will then attract more curious onlookers. That’s what we’re aiming for.

“Oh, it’s almost going to be 30 minutes soon, let’s go back!”

“You’re right.”

When I returned to the classroom, there was quite a line in front of the classroom.

“Oh, line up, line up! The strategy succeeded.”

“Yeah, we’re off to a good start.”

“Hey! Hey, you two! We’re open!”

“Un.”

“Also, don’t do the same thing you did last time okay? Koyomi.”

“I, I understand.”

My shift at the festival is basically the same as Koyomi’s.

It’s because Koyomi insisted on it no matter what.

“Yosh! Then, let’s open!”

I opened the door at the same time as that voice.

“” Welcome!””

“” Ohh—!””

When the guests saw us, they cheered and came inside one by one.

For the time being, I walked to a woman in line too and served her.

“Welcome, My Lady.”

It’s nothing surprising.

At the meeting, we were forced to say the following lines.

Koyomi was also persistent in relation to this, so I was forced to say “My Lady” dozens of times.

Nevertheless, she has a perfect smile, thanks to her practice.

It’s hundreds of times more refreshing than usual.

“How many people are there?”

“Two!”

“I got it. I will now show you to your seats.”

“Yes!”

Perfect customer service. I’ve been practicing like crazy.

“Do you have a girlfriend!?”

“Let’s meet later!”

Well, naturally these kind of questions would be asked, but we have a manual in relation to that as well.

“You surely jest.....My Ladies here are the ones that I consider to be similar to a girlfriend. I haven’t decided on the schedule of my swift yet, so I’m afraid I can’t accept your invitation.”

The tactic here is to make everything ambiguous. That’s written in the manual.

A certain person’s murderous aura was directed at me from behind but I didn’t mind it.

“This is your seat.”

“Oh—! Thank you!”

I pulled a seat and urged them to seat down while handing them the menu.

“Here is your menu.”

“Hee—, they have a lot even though it’s just a cafe.”

“Using recipes from five-star chefs, we have trained numerous times to ensure that the food is of the highest quality.”

“Hee—, isn’t that amazing!”

“UnUn!”

“Well then, please call me when you have decided on your order.”

“” Okay!””

That’s all I say before going to serve another person.

Uwah.....

Smiling fakely and saying these kinds of unpleasant lines.

This is mentally exhausting.

That’s all I could think about for the rest of my shift.

“Let’s take a break.”

“Ok—ay.”

I head towards the next class to take a break.

“Good work~”

“Aah, it’s Koyomi.....”

“Fufu, you look pretty tired, don’t you.”

“Aahh.....it’s draining my energy.....”

“UnUn. You did your best♪”

Koyomi patted my head as she said that as if she is calming a kid.

“Uwahh! How nice!”

“Curse you Kouyou!”

“Tachibana-san! We worked hard too!”

The jealous glances of the boys pierced me.

“No, I won’t! I’m Kouyou’s girlfriend after all!”

“That kind of thing.....is my privilege.”

“Uweh!.....Kouyou doesn’t mind.....”

“You still do it despite thinking that I might not like it?”

“No, that’s not the case but.....you’re always cool, so I thought this kind of thing is.....”

“It’s a little weird, but I’m a high school boy, too. I’d love it if my cute girlfriend did this to me.”

“Cu, cute.....Fuhehe.....But I heard that men don’t like to be patted on the head?”

“Then I might be different.....”

“Fufufu.....How about it? Do you want to go around with me now?”

“Fuwah.....We still have time until lunch, right? Let me take a break for a while.....”

It’s that. Being patted by Koyomi is making me feel sleepy.

I went to bed early last night, and today was not particularly strenuous, but it was nerve-wracking. I’m mentally exhausted to the max.

“Ufufu.....Then should I give you a lap pillow?”

“Un, I’ll count on that.”

“I’ll spoil you today—!”

I quickly put my head on Koyomi's thigh.

She's wearing a maid skirt so it's short.

My head hits her raw legs.

“You must be very tired—”

She looked down at my face as she stroked my head.

“Well.....Or rather, stop emitting bloodlust when I'm serving the customers.”

“After all...To say that the customers are your girlfriend.....”

“I'm just following the manual, and you said so too right.”

“I wasn't saying that from my heart though.”

“Me too, you know.”

“Then who is your girlfriend?”

“Koyomi-chan is my only one.”

“UnUn. I love you, Kouyou!”

“Thank you.....It’s almost 30 minutes so I should get up soon.....”

“Nn—, me too. I can’t make you say that—”

I slowly close my eyes while still lying down on Koyomi’s thighs.

My consciousness slowly fades away.

“Fufufu.....Good night—.....”

She muttered that as she pats my head.

I can really see why.....the boys are jealous now.....

She’s the perfect girlfriend. Koyomi.

She’s a little too good for me.....

And that’s why, I want to answer Koyomi’s feelings more than anyone else.

After a while,

My consciousness disappeared completely.

Chapter 40

“Fuahh.....”

“Ah, you’re awake. Good morning.”

I woke up on Koyomi's lap.

Come to think of it, she came me a lap pillow.

"Good morning, I'm sorry. Thanks for that."

As I said that, I lifted my head.

"Uun, you don't have to worry about it. But.....Nn!"

"?"

Rekizuki spreads both of her hands out.

"As an apology, won't you hug me and pat my head?"

"Yes, yes."

I hugged Koyomi and put a little bit of power behind it.

As I patted her head like that, I heard some kind of relaxed voice as she put her hands on my back.

After a while, I thought that was already enough, but my body won't separate when I tried to stop.

"Nn, Koyomi? It's about time....."

“No—, just a little while more. Okay?”

“Well, it’s fine.”

We hugged each other for the next 5 minutes but Koyomi still has shown no signs of wanting to leave.

However, Akira seemed to have seen that.

“Phew—! Both of you are so passionate!”

“Ueh! A, Akira!?”

“Nn? Ah it’s just Akira…….”

Koyomi separated her hands quickly. In a way this helps me.

“To hug at a place like this.”

“Sh-, shut up! Kouyou, let’s go!”

“Eh, Ah, Un.”

“Oh, take me with you too.”

“No! We have a date by ourselves today. Right?”

“.....It’s exactly as she says.”

“Fuhaha.....I see, I see—, have fun!”

“Of course!”

Thus we leave the classroom and begin our date.

“Fufufu.....Can we cross arms?”

“Do as you wish...”

“Yes! Hey—hey—, where do we go first?”

“First, let’s go get some lunch first.”

“Un, you’re right! Do you have anything you want to eat?”

“Nn—, I haven’t really looked at the brochure yet. If you want, then we could go to our class.”

“Ahaha, that certainly is an option—. Then is it okay if I decide?”

“Of course, I’m looking forward to it.”

“Thank you—!”

And so Koyomi brought me to a normal restaurant.

“Nn? Is it fine here?”

“Un! This place is like a food court, and it’s rather popular because there’s so much variety in food.”

“Hee—, I see.....I guess it’s a restaurant that competes based on the quantity. But why here?”

“He, here there is a special seat.....for couples.....”

“Ah, I see.”

So that’s why Koyomi chose this place.....
Her face was red as usual when she’s embarrassed.

Then it was our turn and we were shown to our seats.

“Since we’re already here, why don’t we pick two different meals and share them!”

“Nn, well that’s okay.....”

I ordered omurice while Koyomi ordered spaghetti.

Koyomi as expected was quite used to this, she didn’t go red over the “Ahn” now, but she does still turn bright red about the indirect kiss.

“By the way, is your family not coming today?”

“Un, as expected they can’t come on weekdays. They will come tomorrow. Along with everyone from the part-time job.”

“Hee—, then it means I get to meet father-in-law and sister-in-law tomorrow.”

“.....You’re amazing...”

“?.....Could it be, will that junior of yours come too?”

“Aah, she might have said that she’s going to come.”

“Muu.....”

“Are you bad at handling her?”

“After all, she said you’re her boyfriend.....”

“She’s just making fun of you.”

“Really?”

“Un.”

“Then it’s fine.”

“Hey, hey. Come on, eat up, we’re running out of time you know?”

“That’s right! Have to hurry up!”

After that, we enjoyed our date at the festival until the next shift started.

Koyomi stubbornly refused to enter the haunted house so we ended up walking around while checking the stores.

And so, the first day went smoothly without much trouble.

“Yosh! Today’s sales got off to a decent start! I even got the customers who came today to rate and review on the festival blog, and it’s a day off. It’s going to be even busier tomorrow, so be prepared! Well, that’s it for the first day of the festival! For now, thanks for your hard work!”

“” Okay—!!””

We bought some new ingredients to restock and separated for the day.

“Kouyou! Do you want to go home together?”

“Nn, okay.”

“Oh, see you both later!”

“Okay—” “Un!”

After we said our greetings to our classmate, we went to the station together.

“Ah, can I go to the toilet for a while?”

“I got it, I’ll wait.”

“Thank you—, I’ll come back soon!”

“Okay.”

Koyomi ran towards the bathroom.

When I thought I’ll fiddle with my smartphone for the time being, I heard a voice calling me out from besides.

“Oi—! Kouyou-kun!”

“Nn?”

I look up and see a girl running towards me while waving at me.

That is.

“Ah, it’s been a long time but we just met the other day.”

“I wanted to meet you—!”

As she said that, she hugs me.

“Uohh!Hey, could you not do it at a place like this.”

“Ihihi, isn’t it fine—”

“Well, it’s not like you can’t but.....”

“She obviously can’t, right?.....”

“Eh?”

I heard a voice from behind and turned around to see Koyomi emitting bloodlust.

“What do you mean by it’s not like she can’t? Are you cheating?”

“Cheating? What’s wrong Kou-kun?”

“Kou-kun....?”

“No, Koyomi, this is a misunderstanding.....”

“Wait, since when have you hugging him? Can you let go already?”

“Wait a minute Kou-kun, who is this person?”

The person who left me was clearly in a bad mood.

Well, I guess that’s understandable. A complete stranger had suddenly asked her to leave.

“You too, who are you to Kouyou?”

“Mumu, aren’t you rude!?”

“No, calm down.....”

“Just answer already.....”

“Haah.....even if you ask me what I am..... I am his sister...”

That’s right, this girl is my sister.

“Heh?Si, sister.....?”

“That’s true, how about you?”

“Ah, Sor-, I’m sorry! I thought he was cheating so I misunderstood!”

“Cheating?.....Could it be, are you Kou-kun’s girlfriend?”

“Ye, yes! My name is Koyomi Tachibana!”

“Eh—! Kou-kun, so you’ve got such a cute girlfriend!? Oh, excuse me. I haven’t introduced myself yet. My name is Kiyama Kaede. I’m one year younger than Kou-kun.”

“Ka, Kaede-chan huh....”

“But, to think that Kou-kun has such a girlfriend.....”

“Well...”

“Umm, umm I!”

“Nn? What’s the matter, Koyomi-chan?”

Koyomi straightened her posture, I could see that she was very nervous.

“I’ll try my best to be a great sister-in-law!

“” Eh?””

Koyomi? What are you saying? I tried to say but I couldn’t.

It’s not like I lost my voice or anything

It’s because before I could say it, I heard a voice behind me.

“Well.....that’s quite a passionate reverse proposal.....”

“Hee?”

My father was behind me.

U, Uwahh.....

This is the worst. It looks like he heard it.

Author's Note:

Finally, Kouyou's sister!

And a little backstory while we're at that?

As many of you may have noticed, the Kiyama family's first names are plants, or rather leaves.

Each of them is a seasonal word for the four seasons.

Autumn: Kouyou(Autum leaves)

Spring: Kaede(Maple trees)

Winter: Konoha (Follage)

Summer: Shigeru(Bushes)

And so, the family of four represents a year.

The heroine's name is Koyomi.

Yes, it's a calendar. It's a calendar that represents the months and days of the year.

Wow! Wow! It's so elaborate!

Don't you think so? It's amazing, right?

This was all by accident.

I couldn't think of a name for the main character when I was first deciding on one, so I took it from a work I was reading that had a heroine whose name was Kouyou.

Rekizuki doesn't have any particular meaning, but I took it from Koyomi, the heroine of Kamen Rider Wizard.

So, when the mother came out, I thought, well, let's make it four seasons! So I made the sister the opposite of autumn, spring, and the mother winter.

Then, lo and behold! By making the four seasons, I unexpectedly found a connection between the Kiyama family and the calendar month.

I just realized that Tachibana is also a plant.

That's the story behind the names.

Chapter 41

"Hee—, Koyomi-chan huh. It's a nice name—"

"To think that Kou-kun can have a girlfriend.....and 2 months on top of it."

“She’s really cute.”

“Th, thank you very much!”

Okay, it’s over—

My father heard it and I was caught. For the time being I’ll tell him more at home. Why don’t we go out for dinner? Since you’re here already, why don’t you stay the night?← Right here.

No, no, no, no, no. I can understand if it’s just for dinner.

Why to the point of staying the night here?

Koyomi was so enthusiastic that she even got permission and brought her luggage.

“No—But, I didn’t expect her to propose—”

“Really—”

“N, no.....it’s in the heat of the moment.....Ehehe.”

“Koyomi, this is not the time to be embarrassed.”

“Eh? Is that so?”

“That’s not true, hey! Kouyou, don’t lie!”

“See.....Ehehe.”

“No—, but to think that I have a daughter now.”

“Me too, to think that I have a sister now.....”

“Ehehe.....”

Koyomi seemed to have broken from all the flattering.

By the way, I told them the whole story about me and Koyomi, but neither Dad nor Kaede were particularly concerned.

“Then from now on, it means that she’s no longer my girlfriend but my fiancée!”

“Fi, fiancée.....” *Poof

“” How cute—!””

“Ehehehe.....”

“Kouyou—! I’ll make you happy—!”

“.....Haahh.....okay, okay.”

“Ohh—! Isn’t that good Koyomi-chan!”

“Ye, yess.”

“No—! But it reminds me of the time when your mother and I were young....”

“That’s true.....”

The two of them were already drunk, their faces red.

“Hey—hey—, Kou-kun.”

“Nn?”

“Aren’t the two of them getting along well today?”

“That’s true.....Is it because Koyomi is here?”

“Uwahh! Really !? Do you think there’s a chance for us to live together?”

“Well, maybe yes.”

“Hooray!”

“I don’t think it’s going to last long though.....”

“You’re an idiot—, you know that both of them are actually very close right?”

“Well.....”

“Once they live together, they won’t want to leave!”

“I hope that’s the case..”

“Fuahhh.....”

“Nn? Is Koyomi sleepy?”

“U, Un..... Just a little.....”

When I look at the clock, it was already 11 o’clock.

Well, it’s pretty hectic so it can’t be helped.

“Father, Mother, We’re going to sleep first.”

“Aah, I see.”

“Oh—! Rejoice Kouyou!”

“?”

“Both of you are alone in the same room!”

“Haah!?”

“Or rather, we don’t even have enough space in the futon for two. That’s because there’s only two guest sheets in this house you see! I’ve booked a hotel for the three of you! You two can sleep in peace!”

“No, that is....”

“Thank you very much!”

“Koyomi!?”

“Fufufu, then shall we go—”

“Well, if both of you are going to sleep then we’re going to leave.”

“Kou-kun, Koyomi-chan, see you later!”

“Hey, oi! Wait a min-”

“See you tomorrow! Good night!”

“Koyomii!?”

And like that, the three of them left, leaving us to our own devices.

Hahaha, I definitely won't forgive you.....

However, there's no way I can tell her not to stay after all this.....

“Koyomi, you can use the bedroom. It's my bed though. I'll spread out the futon in the living room and sleep there.”

As I'm about to go take the futon after saying that

Koyomi grabbed my sleeve and pulls it.

“N-, no.....”

“What is it?”

“I thought we're going to sleep at the same room.....”

“No, that's a joke.”

“Isn't it fine!.....No?”

“No. This is normally a no.”

“Aah—! You’re not sure you can control yourself!”

“No, I’m sure of that though.”

“Then why?”

“My ethics.”

“.....”

“.....”

“.....”

“.....”

“.....No?”

“No.”

“.....”

“.....”

“No—way—! Let’s sleep together—!”

“Like I just said, no.”

“No—! I’m going to beg until I get your approval!”

“No, you see.”

“Ah—! Ah—! I couldn’t hear anything!”

“.....”

“Sleep—! Sleep—!”

“.....Haah.....I’m done. This is troublesome so let’s just sleep already.....”

“Yay! In the same bed, okay!”

“Eh—, but that’s not for two.”

“No—!”

“Alright, alright. I understand.”

“Hooray—!”

“Koyomi, could it be that you drank some alcohol?”

“Nn—? What are you talking about—? Mother-in-law made me drink some weird and bitter drink that she recommended.”

“Ah, that is sake.”

“Well well, let’s sleep! I’m not going to let you sleep today!”

“This is amazing, you contradicted yourself in an instant.”

“Fufufufufu.....Ehehe”

And so Koyomi and I ended up in the same room in the same bed.

This was originally made for one person to use, if you were to add one more it would be hard to fit in.

And yet, Koyomi is closer than she needs to be.

She is so close that I can almost feel her lips on my cheek when she turns her head to the side.

“Koyomi, it’s cramped. Please move a little over there.”

“If you go any further, I’m going to fall—”

Uwahh, no good. She won't move at all.

If she was this close to me, her breasts would naturally hit me and I also heard that she was not wearing a bra since she had just finished taking a bath.

I am a male too. Naturally, I'm conscious of it.

If, if this keeps on going.....!

Why,

I don't particularly have any urge to attract, nor does my sensor reacts to it,

ED?

That's wrong—. My sense of reason is just strong—!

“Hey—hey—, are you okay?”

“Un.”

“.....ED?”

“Say that one more time and I'll leave.”

“Sorry, sorry.....”

“In the first place, what if I actually have a reaction? Is it fine? You were almost assaulted back then.....”

“No,to be honest I’m still scared....”

“Then why.....”

“I trust you.....If it’s Kouyou I’m just scared, it’s not like I don’t want it.....”

“Thank you for that.....It’s fine. I don’t have any intention of betraying your trust. I’m not like that guy.”

“.....Un!.....Thank you!”

After that, Koyomi seemed to have calmed down, and she didn’t try to force herself to talk.

She must be tired.....

I guess that must be why she wanted to relax and hug me.

“.....”

“.....”

“.....Hey Koyomi? Are you awake?”

“Nn—?”

“I said this before, about the kiss. And about going to a trip if we won.....”

“Un.....”

“I still haven’t fall in love with you, you know?”

“Un.....”

“Even after the school festival ends, and even if we go on a trip I might still not fall for you, you know?”

“Un.....”

“I still think that that’s the wrong thing to do.....”

“Un.....”

“But if Koyomi is fine with it.....then it’s fine.”

“Un.....Ehh!?”

Koyomi vigorously rose up from the futon.

“Fufu, what are you surprised about? You’re the one who said it.”

“After all, I thought you would completely refuse.....”

“I know I told you to make me fall in love with you within three months, but I know that no matter how well we get along, no matter how many people around us suggest marriage... It’s only temporary Koyomi. It’s so hard for you, isn’t it?”

“That, that is.....”

“That’s true right?”

“U, Un.....I’m sorry.....”

“The one who should be apologizing is me. To make you bear all this painful burden alone. After you’ve done a lot of thing for me.....I’m sorry?”

“Uu.....uu.....that’s just.....”

When I looked at her, Koyomi was crying.

I gently placed my hand on her head and stroked her.

“If, if Koyomi is fine with it.....if it’s just one kiss.....you can do as you wish. If that’s what you really want.....”

“Of, of course!”

“Is it fine? Won’t it be painful?”

“In exchange, hey.....As expected, I wanted to do it with Kouyou who have fallen for me too..... ”

“I see.....”

“Tha-, that’s why.....It’s selfish but, is it okay?”

“Nn?”

“The Kouyou that fall for me, as a present, as a reward, I want to do it. That’s why.....at that day, won’t Kouyou do it?”

“From me.....you’re too unreasonable.”

“N, no.....?”

“Fufu.....no. I got it, okay.”

“Re-, really!? Thank you! I love you!”

Then, as I lay down on the bed again, she moved even closer and hugged me.

I look into Koyomi's eyes and smile as I pat her on the head.

"I hope we win the festival....."

"Un! I'll do my best! Definitely!"

"Un.....Me too....."

Thus, we spent the night together on one bed.

Chapter 42

"I'm sure today will be even busier than yesterday. I'm sure there will be more shifts. But even so! Let's fight for the win, group 4!"

"Okay—!"

On the morning of the second day, Koyomi and I went to school together as usual without any particular problems.

As an extra information, I was in an absurdly bad mood when I woke up today.

Well, there's a possibility that it's because I slept until the last minute, but I can't deny that I was late.

“In the meantime, go out and find more customers today! Preferably someone who’s working and the one who didn’t come yesterday!”

“” Okay—!””

And so, we went on to search for customers too today.

At this point I’m just so tired from being so uptight from smiling all the time.

My facial muscles are twitching.

.....

.....

“Please come to our class—. There’s maid and butlers along with original cooking that you can enjoy—”

“Nn? Oh? Kouyou-chan!”

“Ah—it’s true—”

“Senpai—! So you’re doing it~”

“Aah, you guys came. Please come to our store.”

“Of course we will!”

“By the way, the customers seem to be coming more than yesterday!”

“Hee—, isn’t that good.”

“Ah, Kouyou-chan! I’m going to be in this. Please watch if you can!”

He handed me one thin sheet of paper after saying that.
In that paper was,

“Muscle championship?”

“That’s right! They are going to compete on muscles!”

“I don’t really care about that kind of intense stuff though~”

“Ah, will you participate too Kouyou!?”

“No, it’s impossible.”

“Ah, is that so! Even though it looks so interesting! It’s all about the size, shape, overall balance and the beautiful posing!”

“Ah, is that so. I definitely won’t participate.”

Or rather, this person will probably win.

They're as big as my thighs okay? My arm that is.

“Ah, is that so!? Then how about this!?”

He gave me another piece of paper,

“Tenkaichi Budokai.....”

“That’s right! Competing against each other’s strength! We’ll talk to each other to decide the conditions for winning and losing!”

“Nene-san, you can’t kill people okay?”

“I won’t do it! I swear on these muscles!”

“No, you can’t swear on that right. Those muscles destructive potential is too high after all.”

“Well, you should definitely check it out!”

“Ah, please cheer for me too on the beauty contest~”

“Okay, okay. I got it. Then please come here later too.”

“I got it~!”

Koyomi said she wasn't going to participate in the beauty contest, so there should be no problems if I cheer for Rumi-chan in the contest.

I only have one break today during my lunch break. All the events that I was asked to watch are in those time slots, so I can watch it without any problem.

Oh, it's almost going to be 30 minutes soon. I should go back soon.

“Welcome—! My lady, I'll lead you to your seats.”

Today is also another busy day of customer service.

As expected, there were more customers than yesterday so it was tough.

Of course, there are more people to serve today.

But, compared to yesterday where there were more female university students, there were more male students today.

In this kind of condition, what we are worried about are molesters. Since this store is open to the public, there is naturally a possibility that strange customers will come. Especially since some of the maids have very short skirts. Koyomi's outfit is just like that.

Apart from that, of course pictures too——

———Ka-ching

See, I told you so. Koyomi's picture was completely taken.

"Sir, would you please refrain from taking pictures?"

"Eh? What are you talking about?"

"Just now, you took a picture of her right?"

"Ha, Haa?"

"I was always in my seat right?"

(TLN: My blood is boiling everytime I read these kind of scenes).

"I'm sure you can take pictures from your seat."

"If I were to take a picture of her, I would stand up and get close before I took the picture. At this distance, you can only see her silhouette, and she could have taken the food, right? I can take the pictures of the food, right? I'm sure."

"But, sir."

"Do you have proof?"

"If we see that then we'll know instantly."

"But it's private information right? You, it's enough! If you keep doubting me, it's going to be unpleasant."

“.....I understand. I won’t try to complicate things.”

“Well, as long as you understand.”

That bastard.....!

Well, it’s true that you can only see her silhouette from that distance, so it’s barely safe.....

But of course, I don’t intend to let this go.

Then why do I give up?

The answer is simple. To catch him in the act.

It’s not uncommon for a spy photographer to be too scared to take a picture from a distance like that.

No, even if there were, such a poor guy would have freaked out and turned himself in as soon as I approached him. It is him who is at an overwhelming disadvantage after all.

So that leaves us with, that guy is probably the acquaintance.

———Pashing.

I caught the man’s hand just before his hand touches the ass.

“Eh, eh, Kya, Kyaa—!!”

“Sir, I don’t think you can escape from this one.....Aaah, I made a mistake. This would be rude to the other customers. You heretic.....!”

“Wh, what is it! My hand just coincidentally almost hit it!”

“But it didn’t seem like it was a coincidence.”

“Guh.....Don’t mess with me!”

I dodged the man’s attempt to hit me and slammed my fist into his stomach as hard as I could.

“Uu.....”

“You, won’t you cut this out already? I told you there’s not excuse for this right.....You were taking a picture earlier right? Here, give me your phone. Quickly!”

“U, Ku.....”

I look at the man’s phone. He got a perfect shot of it. Thorough close up.

I’ll delete it for now, and I’ll hand him over to a teacher.

“Ah, Kouyou, thank you.....”

“Don’t worry about it, let’s return to work.”

“Eh, but.....the present.....”

“We’re going to win right? Do you have the time for that?”

“Aah.....U, Un!”

The rest of the guests had gone quiet.

I’ll apologize for now.

“I apologize for the inconvenience. Things have settled down for now, so please continue to enjoy your stay.”

“.....”

“” Oohh—! Cool—!””

“Hey, bro! You’re so cool!”

“Kyaa! Come serve me over here!”

“Fufu.....thank you very much.”

Apparently, it was a good thing I chased that guy away, because I was the only one who was busy serving customers until the break.

They also made me serve the men in addition to the women that day.

Chapter 43

“A beauty contest, the muscle championship, and Tenkaichi Budokai!”

I am currently walking around the stores while eating with Koyomi.

This takoyaki is pretty delicious.....

So she asked me where I wanted to go today. I told her that I had made a promise to go with everyone and asked if she would like to come with me.

“So what will you do?”

“Well, if Kouyou is going then I’m also going, Rumi-chan is going to participate in the beauty contest right?”

“Nn, that’s right but.....”

“Even though you already have a girlfriend?”

“It can’t be helped, I already promised. Rumi-chan is my friend at work, it’s a somewhat big event for her.”

“Muu.....Well, it’s fine though.”

“Thank you.”

It seems like she is still dissatisfied, but if she doesn’t say anything then I won’t ask.

She wouldn’t like it if I were to ask too much questions after all.

“But.....”

“Nn?”

“I wish you would say something before you decide though.....”

Aah—, that is also true.....

“That’s true.....I’m sorry okay?”

“Uun, it’s okay. It’s just me being a little selfish. Besides, I’m the best right!?”

Koyomi asks, turning a smile towards me.

Just as I thought, she really is cute.

I paused for a while and replied with a wry smile.

“.....Aah. Yeah you’re number one.....”

“Fufu.....I’m glad! It’s going to start soon right? Let’s go.”

As she said that, she pulled my hand and began running.

I let out a wry smile, and matched her running pace.

Our hands weren’t separated.

.....

...

“Hmm—, so let’s start the beauty contest right now!”

“Believe it or not! There are 37 participants today!”

There were cheers all around.

There were quite a few people there. I guess that’s the result of being famous.

“First, let’s start by introducing yourselves!”

“Well then, entry number 1, Yumekawa Ena—!”

“” Uoohh—!””

“Please take care of me!”

While the others were cheering, my face and Koyomi’s face alone were twitching.

“Geh! So that person participated too…….”

“I, I didn’t know……Or rather, so Ena was interested in this kind of thing…….”

“I didn’t get that image from her either…….”

While we were talking, Yumekawa was nonchalantly introducing himself. With a happy set of smiles, of course.

After that, the self-introductions continued.

Rumi finally comes out halfway through.

“Entry number 23! Hayama Rumi—!”

“Hello! Everyone, please take care of me~!”

“” Ooohh—!””

Rumi appears with a smile plastered on her face.

Normally, I'd be in a situation where I'd say something like, "Gross!"

Apparently it was favorable. The assembly hall was making a racket.

“Ah, hmm? Was Rumi-chan that kind of character?”

“No.....her tongue is usually more sharp.”

“It is, isn't it.....”

“It's just a mask.”

“I see.....You're surprisingly honest.”

“Un, I was a little shocked.”

And like that, the self-introductions were over, and the next thing they had to do was to sing a song.

“.....If Shizuku participated she would have been number one.”

“That’s true—”

“Next is! Self-promotion! Please show us your charm!”

Yumekawa started dancing. It was not the usual idol type of dance but the hip hop one.

Ah, she did a headspin just now.

“.....So Yumekawa can do something like this.”

“Un.....I don’t know either.”

“Next is Hayama Rumi—!”

“Ah, it’s Rumi-chan’s turn now!”

“I don’t know her special skill—”

“My special skill is playing the guitar!”

Rumi-chan played the guitar while singing the cover of a popular song.

She wasn’t as good as Momoyama, but it still sounds pretty nice.

The cheers that had risen from the crowd stopped as they were drawn to the singer’s voice and guitar.

They're all watching.

“Amazing—”

“Aah.....,”

.....

“Thank you very much—!”

“” Uoohhhh!!!””

At the end of the performance, I greeted the audience with the loudest cheers and applause I've ever heard.

If it is this popular, it is as if the winner has already been decided.

After that, it was time for the judges to judge, and after a while, it seemed to be over.

Third place went to a girl I don't know.

Second place went to Yumekawa.

And, number 1.

“Then I’ll announce it!”

“The honorable first place goes to...

Rumi Hayama!”

“” Uooohhhhhh!!””

As expected, Rumi-chan took first place.

Rumi finished her speech with a satisfied look on her face and that was the end of the beauty contest.

“That was amazing—”

“Aahh.....”

“What is it about me?”

“It’s amazing.....”

“Fufu, thank you! Kouyou too!”

“I’m not a girl though.”

“You’re not honest—”

“Yes, yes, thank you.”

I have ten minutes until the next muscle championship.

I get up to go to the bathroom or something.

“Ah, Senpai! So you’ve been watching me properly!”

Rumi comes running towards me.

She was a little brighter than usual, and seemed to be happy.

It seems that she was pretty serious about this.

“Un, I was watching. You were amazing.”

“Were you trying to seduce me~! Gro~ss.”

“I’m relieved to see you’re doing so well.”

“You’re happy to be made fun of, gross!”

“I was not happy at all though.”

The two of us talked for a while, and Rumi looked up as if she remembered.

“Ah, are you going to watch the muscle championship?”

“Un.”

I replied in a very normal way, but she looked at me with quite a surprised look on his face, as if she was looking at an alien.

“Eh? You won’t watch it?”

“That, well.....isn’t that the opposite?”

“After all, I promised.....”

“You are uptight in weird places.”

“Nn—? Is that so?”

“Well then, I’ll go visit senpai’s class.”

“Eh? Why? Isn’t it fine to visit it when I’m there?”

It would be in Rumi’s best interest to do so.

Originally, she was not the kind of person who would be interested in butlers, so her goal was probably the food.

If that's the case, I thought it would be more beneficial if you came when I was there and let me serve you.....

"If they find out that we know each other, senpai would be the one who served me. I'd be too scared."

"Scared?"

"Even now, see....."

"Eh?"

I turn around as Rumi points behind me with her chin.

A dark aura flowed from Koyomi's entire body, she is glaring at us.

"I can't believe you're trying to enjoy a conversation without including me....."

"N, no,....Koyomi....."

"You definitely still care about that lie I told you about being his girlfriend, don't you?"

“U, Un. Probably.”

Rumi put her face close to my ear and whispered in my ear.

“Ah—! Stop sneaking around!”

“Ah, then I’ll go now! Bye!”

After saying that, Rumi ran off at a great speed.

That person.....

Running off on her own.....!

“Kouyou.....”

“Ko, Koyomi?”

She looked at me.

Her face wasn’t smiling at all.

Her aura is amazing.

Ah, this is bad.

“It, it’s fine…….”

I immediately hugged Koyomi to put her in a good mood.

“Is this supposed to make me feel better?”

“I hugged her and stroked her head.”

“Uu……Ku!……Soft!”

I kept stroking her silently for 30 seconds.

“Ufufu……Ehe……Kuheh…….”

Fuuh—, that’s a relieve—! She’s easy…….

“From now on! The Muscle Championship begins! Here it comes!

“” Uooooooooohhhh!!!””

“Oh, it looks like it’s starting.”

“Ah, it’s true.....”

It seems that some time has passed while I was in a good mood with Rekizuki.

I mean, that’s a lot of cheers.

I think it’s bigger than before.....

I have a bad feeling about this.

Thus began the Muscle Championship.

Chapter 44

Author’s Note:

Overall rating 20000 points Thank you!

The sweetness and bitterness is completely zero.

It’s just a joke.

It may be boring for those who are looking at it just for the flirting.

I really wanted to write about this you see.....

Personally, it was a lot of fun to write.

In the waiting room, a man(or a woman) was raising his/her spirits to the maximum.

“Fuuu.....my muscles are in perfect form today!”

He bended and stretched his arms while flexing his muscles and looking around.

“Every single one of them looks so weak. I’m sure I can win this one!”

In fact, everyone is far from this man (or woman), and everyone else is aware of it.

Honestly, there’s no mistake this guy (or girl) is going to win.

That’s why he was lamenting the fact that he had no one to compete with.

But he doesn’t seem to realize that about half of professional bodybuilders can beat this man (or woman).....

“Ho, you have pretty impressive muscles.....”

“Nn?.....Ah, you are!”

The person in front of me was a high school student whose face I had seen often in the past two months.

He crossed his arms and looked at me in admiration as if he had seen something interesting.

“Kouyou-chan’s friend!.....What’s your name again!?”

"Nn?Aah, it's Manamoto Taichi."

"Taichi-chan then! It's a good name!"

"If I'm not mistaken.....you are Nene-san...!"

"Yes, I do! A man with the body of a man amongst men and the heart of a maiden! Yes, a body of heavy, thick, large steel and a heart as hard and brilliant as a diamond. That's me! I'm the strongest warrior you'll ever meet!"

"I see.....That's amazing....."

"By the way, I've earned the title of Oka Maxform!"

"What's that? You're telling me that you've mastered the Oka Max Form, which surpasses even the Oka Master...!?"

"Ufufu.....that's right! Looks like it's going to be my win this time!"

"U.....Ku....., I won't lose! You may have bigger muscles than me, but I'm confident in my shape, balance and posing!"

"Oh, I'm confident in mine too of course!"

"Uu.....Kuuu.....!"

"Now that I've reached my max form, I'll have no enemies!"

“Th, that is.....”

How do you know if you don't try?

No!

At this point, the game was already decided.

He had been defeated from the very beginning, before he could even think about muscles.

It's no laughing matter to try to beat this man (or woman) who has reached his or her maximum form when he or she is only the captain of the karate club!

People call gay men the strongest.

So what is this man (or woman) all about?

The answer is simple!

He is the strongest of the gay men. In other words!

The best of the best.

An invincible being who always challenges the limits and improves every day.

This man (or woman) was that.

In this waiting room, he showed her power and unrivaled warmth, looking down on us from above, but gently scooping us up with angelic tenderness.

Everything here sensed it, the two words “defeat” flickering in their brains, and despair.

That he was the strongest, that there was no way they could beat him!

And that bizarre yet somewhat warm atmosphere was sensed by the venue committee members who were assigned to monitor the waiting room, and!

I was overwhelmed.

Committee Member

(There are no tsukkomi here.....)

◇◇◇◇◇

“Nene-san, was it? It would be nice if you could win—”

“Yeah, I guess so. Well, I think I’ll win.....”

I was amazed when I saw him in the flesh once.

He was so muscular.

He looked like a real bodybuilder.

“Then let’s have everyone enter!”

“These are the nine people who applied this time!”

“” ” Uooooooooohhh!!!””””

The crowd cheered as he entered.

“It’s kind of.....more popular than the beauty contest.....”

“Un, this is weird.....this is weird right?”

“Perhaps.....It should be.....”

I’m not so sure I’m going to make it this far.

I wondered if we weren’t the ones who were crazy.

“Ah!”

“Nn? What’s the problem Koyomi?”

“No.....Manamoto is participating too.....”

“Eh?.....That’s true.....”

When Koyomi told me to look at the stage and search for him, I found that he really was captain muscle.

Yes, that guy might be able to win the championship.

But something is wrong.

He was clearly depressed.

“What’s the matter with him?”

“I, I wonder?”

Apparently, Koyomi has also noticed.

I mean, I feel like everyone is gloomy except for Nene-san.

Do they look gloomy because Nene-san is just that much brighter?

I’m sure it’s just my imagination.

However, only captain muscle is seriously dark.

But it’s not something we can do anything about now.

Well, I guess it’s not a bad thing when you’re optimistic in this competition.

.....

.....

In the meantime, the championship went on, and the winner was Nene-san, as it should be.

Author's Note:

It's like, when did you learn the Max Form?

I thought it was a one-episode set-up, but I didn't expect it to be foreshadowed!

How captain muscle knows this is an eternal mystery.

Chapter 45

(Manamoto Taichi POV)

Author's Note:

Still zero sweetness.

"Tenkaichi Budokai! The final match is between Taichi Manamoto and Nene Yashiro—!"

Fuuu—, I took a breath and calmed myself down.

It was a rather easy win until the finals.

However, there was no telling what would happen next. My opponent was a man (or woman) called Nene-san, who had just defeated me miserably in the Muscle Championship.

It's true that I might not beat him in terms of muscle mass or form.

However, I am the leader of the karate club. I have won the national championship many times. I can't be defeated by a mere show-off.

I need to show them the difference in how we work out.....!

The fighting spirit inside of me boils over.

I will win at all costs!

I walked into the ring in silence.

“Then let the finals begin!”

“Let the match begin!”

The bell rings as a sign to start the match.

In this tournament, if you can get your opponent to admit defeat, you win.

Be the first to win! Get to them before they do, and take away their will to fight!

I approached him and hit him with my right hand.

“Oh, no!”

“Fuh, that’s weak!”

My fist was easily dodged, grabbed, and thrown straight back.

Bang! the sound of a collision between my back and the ground echoed through the hall.

All I could see was the ceiling. I don’t know what he did to me, but I instantly understood after thinking for a while. It seems I’ve been thrown.

I couldn’t help but let out a wry smile.

If the technique that you gave your all with the fastest and greatest speed is returned so easily, then you won’t even go down with pride.

But it’s too fast to even think about losing, further ordeal will have to be dealt with.

“An indirect kiss from your sister!”

He kissed my fist and then went to my stomach and lowered his fist vertically.

I tried to guard it, but it’s more powerful than I thought.

I can’t catch it and it stabs me right in the stomach.

“Gahah.....!”

“I held back! Now say that you give up!”

“Uu.....uu.....!”

My stomach hurts.

What is this power! What is this creature!

In the end.....you can't win against an okama huh!

Right now, this being standing in front of me is fundamentally different from me!

This is.....an okama.....

I have no choice.....but to give up huh.....

“I, I giv-”

“Manamoto Taichi! Is this all you got!”

Just as I was about to give up, I heard a voice from the audience seat.

I looked to the source of the voice and saw Kouyou there.

He was looking at me with an expression of anger and he raised his voice.

“.....Manamoto! Do your best!”

“You’re going to be a loser, you know! You can’t protect anything like that! If I did something to Koyomi you’re going to beat me up right! You can’t do anything at that pace!”

Kuh! He’s right! I have to stand!

“Taichi! I came to cheer you on! Hang on!”

Even Akira came here, to cheer me.

I fired myself up and stood up.

“Uwahhhhh!”

“I like it when you get all sweaty like that!”

I lunged at him again.

“But, you see! I’m not so soft that you can beat me with just that!”

His fist hit my left cheeks this time.

I braced my feet to keep myself from falling.

“Uooooohhhhh!”

I countered with a fist to the stomach.

“Uu!.....It won’t be effective!”

“I’m not done yet!”

While he momentarily faltered, I wrapped my arms around his neck and tried to perform the osotagari.

“That is!”

“Uooohhhh!”

Once more, the sound of a back colliding with the floor echoed through the air.

But this time it wasn’t me.

The one who fell was Nene-san.

“” Oooooohhh!!””

Cheers came out from every corner of the auditorium.

“Fufu.....I give up.....It’s my lost!”

“So....., I won?”

“I’m back, and Yatsushiro has announced that he gave up. Manamoto wins this match! Congratulations! Congratulations!”

I, I won.....

I raised my body, look towards the audience, and raised my right hand above my head.

“I won!!”

“” Ooohhhh!””

———Clap Clap Clap

The whole hall burst into applause.

I won, I actually won!

I turned around again and looked at Nene-san.

He’s smiling wryly.

I walk over to her and hold out my right hand. It’s a handshake.

He understands, and we stand up, took up each other's hands, and shake hands.

“Thank you very much!”

I bowed my head deeply and thanked him.

When I lifted my head, he was still smiling at me.

“To sweat like that, I like it very much!”

Afterwards, after the prizes for the winners were given and the interviews were over, I went to my friends and thanked them for their support.

And so my main part of the festival was over.

One win and one loss.

No, that last one might have been on purpose.

With this victory, my heart was filled with the desire to improve further, gratitude for my friends, and a sense of accomplishment.

Chapter 46

“Kouyou-chan cheered him up with that loud of a voice! Do you have any reason for wanting him to win?”

The Tenkaichi Budokai had ended, and a little while after that, Nene-san went to meet me.

We are alone but there is nothing that we do to feel guilty about.

“Don’t play dumb. You are the ringleader after all. And besides that, you lost on purpose right?”

“Ah, that’s true! In fact after all that encouragement, it would be hard to win anyways!”

“Well, that might be true.....Then, I’ll go to my shift.”

“Do your best!”

“Okay, okay.”

I immediately went head straight to the class.

In the first place, why do I cheered for Captain Muscle to that extent?

This is something that happened right before the tournament.

“Will Kouyou cheer for that Okama-san after all?”

“Nene-san? I’m fine either way. He just told me to watch after all so I don’t have to cheer for him.”

“But you cheered for Rumi-chan.”

“No, no. That is a different matter altogether.”

“Nn—? Is that so?”

I talked with Koyomi in the audience seat.

And I heard a voice from behind after that.

“Ah, Kouyou-kun!”

“Ah, Manager…….”

When I turned around, the manager was standing behind.

While holding a karaage.

“So the match have already started!”

“That’s right.”

“As I thought, you must be worried—”

“Worried?”

——Boom

The gong for the start of the match rang.

More importantly, what does he mean by worried.

“Hmm, you didn’t hear about it?”

“What about?”

“Nene-san, he said he would invite Kouyou on a date if he won.”

“I refuse, that kind of thing.”

“He was just saying whatever he liked since he didn’t promised anything.”

“Ah.....”

At that moment, dong! Nene-san’s sound reverberated through the venue.

He seemed to have thrown Captain Muscle down.

Seemed.....seemed.....

No, no, this is bad! If he doesn't win, this is bad for me! He can still stand, right? That's true right?

"I...."

Hee? This is a lie right? Oi! Captain Muscle!

"Lo-."

Don't say it!

"Tsu."

"Manamoto Taichi! Is this all you've got!"

I shouted loudly. It is unforgivable if you lose like this. A gym date, what kind of punishment game is that!

And Koyomi cheered too, pulled by the momentum from me. I spurred him once more.

And luckily, Akita was in the audience seat too.

Captain muscle began standing again after all the encouragement, this time he threw Nene-san down, and it ended with Captain Muscle's win.

That was my reason for cheering him on.

Later, the captain thanked me and told me that he wasn't thinking of beating me up, but I just replied accordingly

◇◇◇◇◇

“Welcome—!”

I served the customer once again as I got back to the class.

But it's about time soon. In about one hour, the shop will close.

It was tough but I don't know if I got used to it since I don't feel as unpleasant as yesterday.

That goes the same for the others too, they seem more natural now. Of course Koyomi too.

“Hee—! So this is that so-called cafe!”

It seems like there are some new customers, from the voice it sounds like a man. It's the maid's turn. Koyomi who seemed like she had some free time went to the reception desk.

“Welcome—! Custome.....”

“Yaho—! No time to see—!”

“Ho-, how.....!”

It seemed like Koyomi is troubled.

She shivered when she heard the voice. Since I'm free right now, I went to Koyomi right away.

“Sir—, what's the probl.....”

“Ah, Glasses!”

The one there is Sakai's, Koyomi's former boyfriend.

Koyomi is shivering, and she is standing behind me, she grasped my arm without letting go.

“I'm not wearing a glasses now though.”

“Oh, image change?”

“That's not it. So? Why are you here?”

“What? So I can't come without any business?”

“That's right. If possible I would like you to go quickly.”

“I’m a customer, you know?”

“You are forbidden from entering this place.”

“What did I do?”

“You tried to lay your hands on one of our employee. It’s a splendid crime. Can I take you into custody?”

“What’s the proof?”

“There’s a testimony.”

“That can’t be prove. You might try to set me up right?”

“Anyone would know just from this shaking.”

“It looks like a lie to me though? Is your eye rotten?”

“That might be true.”

“Do you discriminate against customers? I’m a customer you know? Quickly serve me. It’s maids for the male right? I have no interest in a man like you.”

“.....Excuse me. Someone please come serve this guy! Koyomi is not feeling very well.....”

“No—, I want that person to serve me,”

“Oi! You bastard! Why do you come!”

Akira, who was in the same shift came here as he noticed Sakai.

He shouted at Sakai with a terrific vigor.

“Akira, wait.....we can’t do anything right now.”

“That’s the thing. Quickly serve me Koyomi—”

“Kuhh.....!”

It’s true that it’s frustrating that I can’t do anything.

At the very least, I won’t let Sakai make in contact with Koyomi any more than this,

“I’m sorry Sir. You can’t name the employee in this store. This girl seems like she is feeling a little under the weather.”

“Eh—, it doesn’t seem that way to me just now though?”

“That’s in the past, there’s no point in worrying about every little thing.”

“The past huh.”

“Well then.....”

To bring Koyomi to the resting room, I pulled her shoulders.

But, Koyomi stopped moving and looked at my face.

“.....Kouyou, thank you.”

“More importantly, let’s go.”

“I’m, I’m fine.....It’s just like Kouyou said, it’s all in the past, there’s no need to worry about it so much.”

“That’s not what I meant when I said that.....”

“Me too, I won’t run away anymore. That person is all in the past. It’s completely unrelated to me right now, I deny it myself.”

“Koyomi.....”

There was certainly a strong will in those eyes of hers, she kept control of the shivering by forcing herself, it seems like she is suppressing the dread and desperate emotions she is currently having.

I look at Sakai. He is grinning. Revolting.

But, it's useless for me to say anything. I can't waste Koyomi's effort right now.

He won't do anything inside a store anyways.

"I got it.....But, I will go too."

"Un.....Thank you"

"Aah."

"Nn—, well it's fine. If it's you two."

"Si, sir, I'll lead you to your seat."

"Okay—!"

It was different from a while ago, Koyomi's smile was awkward and full of discomfort.

Chapter 47(Koyomi's POV)

That day is 1 month ago from today.

I confessed to Kouyou and was rejected.

And I was given a chance and we became temporary lovers once more as it was a false confession.

Kouyou said that there was not much difference between the temporary one and the real one.

I'm just happy at that point.

And that's why, to become the real thing even just 1 second earlier, I continued my appeal on a daily basis.

And the cultural festival yesterday and today. It's so much fun!

I even had a sleepover yesterday!

He even promised to kiss me.

Thinking about it, I was not tired at all because of the sales. With a smile and more energy than yesterday, I went to work.

I continued to work with Kouyou's first kiss in my mind.

I didn't think there would ever be a cloud over that thought of mine, that smile.

Even though I thought that, that guy appeared.

Sakai. I was shocked the first time I saw him. I didn't even told him what school I was going to. He must have looked it up.

To begin with, I was in a uniform when we met again last time so he could easily know which school I go to.

At first I thought of running away.

But Kouyou helped me, it can't be like this, is what I thought. I shouldn't be running but to rise up and I have to overcome this.

"I get it.....But I will come too."

"Un.....Thank you....."

"Aah."

"Nn—, well it's fine. If it's the both of you."

"Si, sir, I'll guide you to your seat."

"Okay—!"

I led Sakai to an empty seat.

Kouyou is silently watching me by my side.

I'm going to be okay if it's like this. I was strangely relieved. I still feel some dread but that's only natural. He tried to rape me. It's not a trauma that could be wiped out in one night. Still, knowing Kouyou was by my side made me feel somewhat safe.

“This is the menu. What will the order be?”

“Nn—, Koyomi, you look cute in that outfit.”

“The order.”

“Ahahaha, your reaction is weak—. Even though you would be happy back then.”

“I don’t remember that.”

“No—, that is a lie. There’s no way you can forget. Because Koyomi has a dependence on me.”

“That is…….”

“It’s because you were dependent that you did that kind of”

“Sir, if you don’t have any orders then it would be splendid if you could go home.”

Sakai’s words were almost drowned out by Kouyou.

“You’re noisy…….It was the time for recalling the past. Can you shut up for a while?”

Sakai glared at Kouyou.

Kouyou looked at Sakai with the same expression in regard to that.

Sparks seemed to be flying only from Sakai's side.

"I do not have time for Sir's worthless chitchat."

He spoke plainly in the same atmosphere as usual.

".....Haah.....I was just thinking a bit.....Then, omurice....."

"How about the drink?"

"I don't need any."

"Yes, sir."

I heard Kouyou take his order and went to the kitchen like that.

But it wasn't my voice in the middle but Kouyou's.

"You changed huh!"

"What is it?"

“The last time I saw you, you had this kind of weird anger, like you’d just get angry with me or something? Now you’re calm, you’re trying not to take me on, or is it anger in silence?”

“Is that so.”

“The next time you interfere, I’m going to crush you.”

“.....Do as you wish.”

Be, because of me.....Kouyou will get crushed?

When I became anxious, a hand reached out from my side and stroked my head.

“It’s okay, don’t worry about it.”

With a kind smile, he cheered me.

I realized it when I was getting anxious.

He really is kind.....I love this kindness of his.

Me too, I definitely won’t run away anymore.

◇◇◇◇◇

“Then, you are dismissed for today! Thanks for your hard work—!”

“” Good work—!””

Sakai didn't particularly did anything, he went home normally after eating his food.

No, he didn't go home normally.

Just one thing, he passed a letter to me before that.

He's probably going to call me.

However, in this case, I wonder if I should tell Kouyou about the letter as well.....

If you don't want to be harmed, shut up and go alone.....

“Koyomi, what letter?”

“Uehh!”

I heard Kouyou's voice.
I quickly hid the letter and turned around.

“Wh, why.....”

“Because I saw it. He handed you a letter right? He was probably trying to call you or something, but I wonder if you are trying to go alone.”

“Uu, you’re sharp…….”

“Well that’s how it is, besides that have you seen it?”

“No I haven’t…….”

“I see, then let’s see it.”

“No, but……it’s dangerous for me to be alone, you know?”

“It’s fine. I told you not to worry about it right? Besides, we’re not going alone.”

“Eh, what do you mean?”

“It means you don’t leave your friends in danger.”

“That’s—what—it means.”

“I’ll protect you.”

“E, everyone…….”

Ena and the others were there.

It wasn't just Kouyou. Everyone is trying to fight for me.

I was so happy my tears almost overflowed. look down and try my best to hold back. I can't cry, not right now.

“No, don't give me that tears and all those troublesome things, hand over the letter quickly.”

Ha?

Clang

“The tears haven't come out yet—!”

“But you were going to cry anyway.”

“You're ruining the deeply moving atmosphere!”

“I told you I don't need that passion.”

“You two—? This is not the time to fight, you know—?”

Hah, that is true. I suddenly became excited.

Thanks to that, my anxiety and nervousness was blown away. Maybe that was what Kouyou was trying to do.

“Okay, Etto....., Ah—, he said there was an abandoned factory near the station.....”

“Ah—, so it’s there.....It’s definitely a generic place.”

“I’ve had enough of this place. You’ll call the police this time, right?”

“U, Un.....”

“Then you’d better go to the factory and make sure that Sakai is there.”

“That’s true.”

“So, let’s get moving!”

We went straight out of the school and headed to the place we were called to.

Kouyou is standing besides me.

As I thought, I’m a little anxious.....

“It’s fine. Look, Manamoto is here. I’ll call the police, it’s not like we’re going to fight.”

He whispered that to me and intertwined his hands with mine.

Up until now, it was all from me, but now Kouyou is holding my hands.

“We’ll have fun together at the festival tomorrow.”

“Un!”

This warmth in my hands runs through my whole body and makes me smile.

Kouyou alone.....I won’t let go.

No matter how many times they say no, I’ll hang on desperately!

Forgetting about Sakai, I made up my mind to overcome this.

Chapter 48

Author’s Note:

Uu.....

There’s a bit going on.....I’m sorry for not being able to settle the problem yet.
Sorry.

“Kiyah!”

“Are you okay?”

“U, Un.”

To go to the place where Sakai had called us to, 8 of us went to a nearby station. It’s Saturday and the school was currently having a school festival so there were more people around the station than usual.

Because of that, Koyomi bumped into someone and she fell on her butt.

“Oi—, what are both of you doing?”

“Koyomi bumped into someone.....Okay.”

Yumekawa and the others were in front of us, when they noticed that we weren’t coming they came back to check on us so I told them what happened.

I reached my hand out to Koyomi and held her up.

“Thank you.....Ah, someone dropped something.”

“Eh?”

Something that looked like a house key was brushed off by Koyomi.

“For now, let’s go to the police station.....”

“No, I think this one is from that person that bumped onto me.”

“Why do you think so?”

“I heard a metallic voice as I fall to the ground just now.”

“I see.....then go on. We’ll wait for you.”

When I looked back, the person just now seemed quite far away.

No, of course he is not that far away. However I’m afraid that I might lose sight of him in this crowd.

“Ah, Un! I’ll go for a while! You guys can go ahead!”

I followed Koyomi who sprinted.

“Nn—, well, it’s true.....And the sooner we caught Sakai the better it is.....Then you stay with Koyomi, Kouyou.”

“Nn, I got it.”

“Thank you! Well then, let’s go!”

Everyone went ahead first.

I vaguely gaze in the direction where the Koyomi ran.

Yes, there are a lot of people, but it's just a station area. It's not like a train station at the time when the Mouse Kingdom is about to close. It's not a huge traffic jam.

There is more than enough space for one person to walk around.

Why did Sakai hand in the letter in the classroom so openly?

If he handed it in there, of course I and everyone else would see it.

If you think about it properly, this all seemed weird.

Even if he handed the letter, he won't know if we will even come.

Even if he came here, there is a possibility that he could just ride a train home just like that.

That same guy who went all the way to the festival, and now he's going to wait?

I have a bad premonition about this. And in this case, this is more often right than wrong.

I turned around and looked for Akira and the others at once but they were no longer in sight. I lost them.

For the time being I tried to call him but there was no answer.

This is a crowded place. The sound of the ringtone might be drowned in the crowd.

Then, the police!

I looked at the way where Koyomi ran off to.

She's no longer there.

Damn it, I completely lost her.

This means I can't find the place to call, and more importantly, I don't have the time to make a phone call.

There's no choice but to go alone now.

For now, I ran towards the path that Koyomi was in.

After a while, I looked around.

Then, I saw the back of a person who looked like Koyomi for a moment to my right.

(There she is!!)

For an instant, I can't tell if it's her or not. There are plenty of people who look like her. The odds of it being Koyomi herself are slim.

Even so, it's definitely Koyomi. I have enough confidence to declare that. I've been watching Koyomi more than anyone else for the past month. There's no way I could be wrong.

I ran. I can't lose her anymore. I ran with my full might.

◇◆◇◆◇

“Stop it! Let go!”

I chased after him to give him the key, but he was faster than I thought and I couldn't catch up with him, but strangely enough, he was always in my sight.

While I was chasing it, I got quite far away from it and I gradually became dispirited.

It allowed me to hand over the key.

But in the end, it turned out to be a trap from Sakai.

The moment I handed over the key, my arm was yanked and I thought I was being taken away to a deserted alleyway, but there was Sakai with a smile on his face.

Sakai approached me and grabbed both my arms.

I raised my voice in a desperate attempt to resist.

“Oh, come on, don’t resist so much. You would be happy before. Can’t I hold your hand? And then! Hahaha!

“That’s from how many years ago!”

Sakai looks at me with amusement as I resist, and laughs.

There are seven of us here, including Sakai.

“I’ll tell the police!”

“If you tell them, I’ll spread your embarrassing photos!”

“Eh.....”

My face turned pale. No way.....

“It’s okay, don’t worry. I won’t do it here. I have the decency to do that! Two of my friends will be arriving soon with a car. Then we’ll all be on the move.”

Sakai pats my head and touches my cheek.

A bad feeling runs through my whole body and I get goosebumps.

“No! Don’t touch me!”

I desperately tried to shake Sakai off and escape, but he grabbed my arm.

My head, my cheeks, my arms. Everything that was touched felt disgusting.

I found myself in tears.

“No! Stop it!”

“Don’t cry~”

“Why!Why me.....”

“After all you, you have a nice figure and you’re a high school girl who I know!
It’s just perfect from my point of view~”

“No.....!Someone.....someone please help me!.....”

I tried desperately to speak, but no one could hear me.

“Don’t scream!”

They make me turn my face and cover my mouth with my hand.

It's disgusting, disgusting, disgusting.....

And yet, all I could do was cry

I'm scared..... I'm scared.

Kouyou.....

“Don't cry like that. Are you still a virgin by any chance? That would be a bad thing. It's better to have your first time with your boyfriend. Don't worry, I'll be gentle at first. You'll get used to it! All the guys here are experienced. Hey!”

“Ouu!” “I'll be gentle!”

“So don't cry anymore.”

“Hey, what are you doing?”

“Aah!?”

As Sakai and the others were talking, I heard a voice from behind me, a voice that I was familiar with and loved more than any other.

Sakai and the others seemed to relax for a moment because of the suddenness.

I took that opportunity to turn my face back.

He was breathing slightly hard, as if he had been running.

“I’m asking what you’re doing to Koyomi.”

Kouyou.....

Chapter 49

“I’m asking you.....what you were going to do with Koyomi.”

I lost sight of it for a bit, but managed to find it since it was the only place around here that was not popular.

I glared at Sakai and the others.

“Oh glasses I didn’t think you’d come! Can’t you see that? I’m about to rape her.”

“Don’t you see? I’m trying to stop it.”

“I wasn’t expecting you to come.”

“Bullshit..... You could have aimed for that crowd and separated each of them, but they could have followed you together. That’s why you called your people, isn’t it?”

“Hahaha, you’re right. I told you, didn’t I, Glasses? Next time you get in my way, I’ll destroy you.”

“No, you’re the one who’s interrupting.”

I walk over to Sakai and slowly approach him.

“Huh?”

“You took away our fun cultural festival and Koyomi’s precious time. You’re in the way.”

“Shut the fuck up!”

Sakai pulled away from Koyomi and grabbed me by the chest.

He looked like he was about to punch me in the face.

I’m the one who wants to be angry, so why is this guy so mad?

“You’re not Koyomi’s boyfriend anymore. Give it up. If you wanted to get laid so badly, why did you do something that would get you dumped? It’s okay to go out with someone you don’t even like for now. You can also go out with someone just to get laid. But at the very least, give her a serious response to her true feelings. Don’t treat her like she’s a substitute.”

“It’s my choice! I haven’t done anything wrong! I’ve done nothing wrong! The calendar month fell in love with me, and she confessed to me! I went along with her winning tricks. Then she would have no problem letting me f&ck her in return.”

(TLN: Man, I’m really tired of translating this guy’s line.....my desk is going to break one of these days if this author keeps writing this kind of stuff.....)

“No,, you’re fundamentally wrong. You scum, listen. She fall in love on her own? She confessed as she please?. Playing house all on her own? That’s not true. You’re the one being selfish.”

“Aa?”

“You’re the one who took part in the fun and games of Koyomi. You took advantage of a gap in Koyomi, participated without permission, and made her dependent on you. But Koyomi is not like you! By using you, Koyomi is eventually growing up. You didn’t realize it and looked down on her! You left her of your own accord. That’s why Koyomi left you too! You’re the one who misunderstood, Sakai. And now you’re telling us that is a treasure to us, even if it’s a trivial plaything to you. You’re in the way. We don’t need you anymore. I’ll never look back at the men of the past who can only drag their feet down below.”

“Shut up! Shut the fuck up!”

Sakai lets go of me and grabs Koyomi again.

“Hey, beat that guy up.”

He ordered one of my people to destroy me.

“Oiyo, die for a second!”

The guy tries to hit me, but I avoid him and counter punch him in the stomach. When he was scared, I gave him three more fists and finally a kick. He was knocked out in the end.

"You, you are surprisingly strong. But hey! Can't you see? There are six of us, even without him! You can't win against this many people!"

"I wouldn't lose to two or three, but not six. I'm just an amateur who is a little strong in fights."

"That's what I'm talking about. You're dead!"

"Kou, Kouyou!"

Koyomi looks at me with anxious eyes.

She must be worried about me. That's why I have to reassure her.

"Don't worry, these guys won't get me, and I'll get you out of there."

I walked closer to Koyomi

We're already surrounded, three in the back and three in the front.

"Too bad! You can't help her!"

"I bet."

“Ha, haah?”

“I never said I was going to help her by myself.”

“Haah!?”

『Kouyou-chan! Is it okay like this!?!』

As Sakai raised his voice, a sickening voice could be heard from behind him.

It looks like they made it.

Looking back, I saw that the three people who should have been behind me were already stretched out, close together, with one macho man standing in their place.

“Yeah, thank you, Nene-san.”

“Nfufu, don’t worry about it! He’s an enemy of any maiden!”

“What the hell? You big, old man!”

“I told you I’m not an old man, you greenhorn!”

“Whoa!”

Nene-san is rather sensitive to the word “old man”.

He glared at Sakai with a tremendous aura and expression.

It seemed that Sakai was scared out of his wits.

Just then, I heard a car stop in front of me.

“Heh, looks like we got a ride! Bye!”

Sakai and the others started running. There was no way we could let them escape.

“As if I’ll let you go! You take care of the small fry, Nene-san! I’ll save Koyomi!”

“All right!”

We’ll run, too.

As Nene-san kicked out the small fries around me, I was able to catch up with Sakai, who was grabbing Koyomi, rather quickly.

“Damn it! You’re in my way! You guys! Get in the car first!”

Sakai left Koyomi with the two men as they came out of the car.

“As if I’ll let you go!”

“I’m talking about you. Glasses,, you’re in my way. I’ll crush you!”

I hit him with a right hand to the face. I immediately lowers his stance and goes straight for an elbow to the stomach. He holds his stomach, and when his face comes down, I landed a straight uppercut. After that, a kick to the heel. The kick hits the side of the head, and Sakai hits the wall on impact.

“I told you right? I won’t lose if it’s just one person.”

“Guh.....Uu.....”

“” Guhah!””

“Sen—pai, I cleaned up here, too.”

I heard two desperate voices and a younger one coming from the car, so I looked towards the car.

For some reason, Rumi was there, sinking the two men who had come out of the car earlier to the ground.

“Ru, Rumi-chan.....you came too.”

“Yes~, you were in trouble anyways right~. Be grateful to me~”

“Ahaha, thank you.”

By the way, Rumi is the daughter of an aikido dojo owner.

The person in question didn't do it because she said it was too hot, but even so, it was drummed into her even if she didn't want to until elementary school and halfway through junior high school.

I mean, even now, I sometimes train in the dojo with me and Nene-san for self-defense.

Anyways, she is strong.

“Kouyou-chan! I'm done here too! It's a great way to relieve the stress of losing the martial arts competition!”

Apparently, Nene-san was finished as well.

The rope was even wrapped around them carefully.

“That's great. Thank you both of you.”

“Ugh, fuck you!”

“Nn?”

Apparently Sakai can still move. But, he's going to lose anyways.

As I readied myself, Sakai pulled out a knife.

I avoided the slash. However, while doing so, I receive a kick to the stomach.

“Uu!”

“Heh! Goodbye then!”

“Heck! Goodbye!” Sakai ran away. It seems that he is planning to escape alone.

“Hey! Get out of the way! Woman!”

“Rumi-chan! Watch out!””

Oh no, Rumi's going to get attacked!

Just then, a man comes out from the side as if to protect Rumi.

“Who's there? Get out of the way!”

Sakai tries to stab the knife.

However, the man instantly avoided him and grabbed his right arm, which had been stabbed, and put it on his back.

“Guhah!”

After falling, he continued to twist his arms up to his shoulders.

“GUUAAAA!!”

Sakai’s wail of grief.

The man stomped on Sakai’s stomach with his foot, held him down, and looked at me.

“Phew. I guess that settles it. Kouyou-kun!!”

“Ma, managerr!!”

The one who was standing there was the manager.

“Why, why are you here.....”

“I’m the one who called him.”

“Isn’t he strong?”

“Even if I’m like this, I’ve been doing judo since I was in elementary school. Well, it’s been a long time since I quit, so my muscles have become weak, but my body remembers the techniques.”

“Oh, really?.....”

Seriously? I didn’t know that. I didn’t know the manager was such a character.....

“Oh, senpai, I called the police, they’ll be here soon.”

“Whoa, thanks. Also, can you call Akira and the others on my phone?”

“Yeah, well, okay.”

“Hmm, thanks.”

After thanking him, I approached Koyomi.

I know I’ve made you wait a long time.....

I’m sure I’ve caused you a lot of anxiety.....

I squatted down, hugged Koyomi, and stroked her head.

“I’m sorry I kept you waiting. I’m sorry I couldn’t help you sooner.
You’re going to be okay. Don’t worry.”

“Uuu, I was afraid.....! I was horrified!

“Un, it’s fine now.”

Koyomi presses her face against my chest and starts to cry.

“But, but.....”

“Nn?”

“I was so happy. I was so angry that I couldn’t stop crying, but now I’m so happy that I can’t stop crying. Wadaji, wadaji, I love you so much! Thank you, thank you

(TLN: She slurred her words due to her crying which made it wadaji instead of watashi which means me.)

“Yeah, you’re welcome.”

While Koyomi continued to cry, I just kept hugging her and patting her head.

Chapter 50

“Kouyou! Are you okay!”

“You’re—late!”

“Ah, my bad.”

We couldn't contact them no matter how many times we tried, so in the end, Akira and the others came around 30 minutes after the events.

Sakai and his people have already been taken away by the police.

“Hmm? Where is Koyomi?”

“Nn? She's right here right.”

As I said that, I pointed to my knee.

Koyomi is sleeping on my lap while smiling as if she is floating, she seemed to be sleeping peacefully.

“Lap, lap pillow.....”

“Since Koyomi have been full of vigor since yesterday, she have been moving quite a lot. She must have been tired to fall asleep after crying.”

“Is, is that so.....How about the people from your part-time job? I have to say my thanks to them.”

“Rumi-chan went home immediately after I made the call, the other two were being inquired by the police regarding the incidents. Actually it was supposed to be Koyomi or me who should be there but Nene-san and the others lowered their

head and asked for it to be postponed. In the end the police accepted that as they saw Koyomi's sleeping face."

"Sleeping face?"

"Her eyes were swollen from all the crying, and her face were still filled with tears, but it was unbelievable that she seemed so happy when she was sleeping on my lap. So they didn't want to be a hindrance."

"I see....."

"And after that, we conveyed it to the parties that had to be informed, and it was arranged so it wasn't conveyed to the mass media or the society."

"I see.....that's good."

Akira and the others let out a relieved voice.

But well, the truth is that it can't be helped. Everyone helped a lot this time. Frustratingly, the manager too.

Even now, I should be thanking them.

"Or rather, why did they come too?"

"Aah, I called them."

"In the middle of all that?"

“No way.....I don’t have that kind of spare time, if I was going to call someone, I would have called the police.”

“That’s true. Then how about him?”

“He came in the end. It was dangerous with just us children’s right? That’s why he called someone else to help, and from there Nene-san called the manager.”

“Aah, I see. He is smart.”

“Nene-san was tailing us from a little further away from us, but that congestion was beyond my expectations. Because of that, he lost sight of us.”

“Then how do you find her?”

“I was just lucky. I met with Rumi-chan as I was on the way of pursuing them, and so she called Nene-san. After that we caught up to them and Rumi-chan told Nene-san about what’s happening. Well, I don’t know why Rumi-chan came along and beat Sakai’s people, but apparently Nene-san and the manager was called.”

“Aah, I see.....”

The congestion of the street at that time really helped Sakai’s plan, so it was really lucky that I met Rumi-chan on the way.

If we hadn’t met there, I wouldn’t know what would have happened to Koyomi or me.

When I looked at Koyomi's sleeping face, a smile leaked out of my face.

After that, I silently stroked her head.

“Nn.....Kou.....yo....u.....”

I heard a little bit of her sleep-talking.

Seeing that condition of hers, I think that this incident this time might not leave a scar in her psychological state anymore.

Especially since this incident was solved without much casualties.

“Then, I'll be going home soon, so someone bring Koyomi back to her home.
Don't wake her up.”

“Eehh? How about you?”

“I'm sorry, I have something that I absolutely can't put off.”

After I said that, I stood up so as to not wake Koyomi up, leaving her to Koyomi.

“Nn.....Nn.....No....Don't go! Kouyou.....please don't go—.....”

“Uehh!?”

“.....”

Thank goodness she was just sleep-talking. I was so shocked I let out a strange voice.

Or rather, changing her laps like this, is she a genius!

“You, even Koyomi said that.”

“She’s just sleep-talking.”

“But.....”

“It was an important matter.....”

“Even more than Koyomi?”

“No.”

“Then.....”

“But, I really can’t let this one go. This is like putting the cart before the horse but, this one.....just this.....I.....”

“Nn, well, if that’s the case then I can’t stop you…….”

“Thank you.”

“If you need something tell me okay.”

“Aah, it’s fine.”

I whispered to Akira’s ear.

After Akira listened to that, he looked at me as if he was surprised and deeply moved.

“I see…….If you go that far. Yosh! Do as you please!”

“It’s not like that…….it’s just that, I thought of that sometimes. Ah, but I’m going to Koyomi’s house later, can you tell her that? I was thinking of staying over if Koyomi is okay with it. Or rather, I would like to do that with everyone. Of course, after all that’s happened, I think she must be scared.”

“Ou! I got it! After bringing Koyomi back home, we’re all going to bring our luggage!”

“Nn, thank you…….see you.”

“I’ll see you later!”

“Aah”

I quickly moved away from there.

The sun began to submerge.

I’m bad at things like this, and it takes time.

This is bad.....I don’t have much time....

I ran.

Today.....a lot happened.

Come to think of it, I was supposed to be going on a date with Koyomi today but we couldn’t.

And that’s why, I want to give Koyomi the best cultural festival.

◇◇◇◇◇

Incidentally, after Koyomi was brought to her home, this is her reaction after waking up.

“Uwaaaann!.....Kouyou is not here!”

“Wai-, Oioi this is beyond our expectations! Kouyou! Are you still not done!”

Chapter 51

Author’s Note:

I’m sorry for the late update.

I had some minor business to attend to.

Yesterday, after that matter, when I was about to go home, Koyomi was resting peacefully. Apparently she was crying timidly when I wasn't there.

Nonetheless, it seemed like the incident yesterday with Sakai doesn't leave a trauma in her heart. She's a strong girl.

And today is the last day of the school cultural festival.

My shift and Koyomi's shift are only until noon, which means that we will have free time after that.

In other words, we're going on a school cultural festival date after that.

After we finished our shift, we quickly go to eat our lunch and discuss our plans.

"Where will we go to eat lunch?"

"Aah.....No, Umm....."

"Nn? What's the matter?"

"No, there's nothing! It's nothing. Where should we eat right?"

Koyomi's condition is a little weird.

I didn't particularly do anything strange today, nor do I say anything of that sort.

If that's the case, then I think the problem lies with Koyomi.

Or rather, she looks like she was going to tell me something.
But nothing came out.

Should I try to ask here?

"Koyomi, do you have anything you would like to say?"

"N-, no.....there's nothing, did I worry you? I'm sorry."

"But I feel like there's something wrong with your condition today?"

"I, I was just so happy I can't calm down."

"I, I see."

Nn—, as I thought it's definitely not that.

But she was trying to hide it so I should probably not pursue it further.

Well, it's not as if I can't guess from the timing. If she doesn't want to say it then it's fine. I'll wait until she talks.

"Then where should we go to eat?"

"Umm, I wonder where....."

“Ah, doesn’t this one look good?”

I pointed at a brochure, and Nozomi took a look at it.

“An original method of udon they say. This wasn’t in our shop so we haven’t tried this since the school cultural festival started right? I can’t make this usually after all.”

“Ah.....Un.....isn’t that fine...”

I saw Koyomi’s tension drop down.
Could it be that she doesn’t like udon or noodles?

“No.....? I’m sorry, I don’t know what Koyomi likes at all. Please tell me what you like. We’ll then find from there okay?”

“Uun, I don’t hate udon at all! It’s nothing.....Then, let’s go eat?”

“Eh? Ah, Un.....”

I took Koyomi’s hand and brought her to the store.

She was speaking as if she’s having fun, but her face was casted downwards.

Was she being considerate to me, or could this be from another different reason?

I couldn't find the answer, but I had decided to make Koyomi as happy as possible today. This can't continue.

I stopped walking in the middle.

Koyomi whose hand was pulling me was turning towards me.

“So-, sorry.....was I too fast? Or could it be that you don't like someone to touch your hands?”

“No, that's not it.....What's the problem? Koyomi?”

“Eh?”

“Your condition today is a little weird. If you were being considerate to me then you don't have to. You should just say what you think without holding back.”

“That's not it! It's fine! I told you right? I can't calm down because I'm too happy!”

Koyomi forcefully tried to put up a smile, she was probably trying to increase the tension but it was clear that she was forcing herself.

“Is that really fine?”

“Eh?”

“Koyomi.....do you know what day it is today?”

“Eh? I, I don’t know.....”

It seems like she was doing it on purpose.

Perhaps she was afraid of me telling a different one.

“It’s fine, Koyomi probably knows about it if she thinks about it.”

“Eh, Etto.....was it 2 months since then?”

“Un, that’s right.”

That’s right. Today is exactly 2 months after we started dating since that punishment game.

“Is it fine with that?”

“What, what is it?”

“The 2 months anniversary. Especially since there was a lot last month that you didn’t get to do much. That’s why, I was trying to make Koyomi enjoy today as much as possible.”

“U, Un.....”

“But Koyomi doesn’t seem to have fun today at all. To force yourself to be considerate, and forcing yourself to smile.....are you really fine with that? If you have something you would like to say, just say it anyways, let’s enjoy it as much as we can.”

“Ca-, can I really say it.....?”

“Un, of course.”

Koyomi was bashfully moving her body.

She started to blush, and moved as if she was shy, happy and apologetic.

That miraculous balance was incredibly attractive.

That expression is nice. If I was a high school student without reason, I would have immediately taken that picture.

“Ah, umm.....”

“Nn?”

“I, I made lunch.....Can we not go to a store.....and eat together?”

“.....A lunch box?”

“Un.....last time, you told me that you feel like the one you made on your own is the best.....it might be troublesome but.....it was the anniversary.....I would like you to eat it.....I’m not as good as Kouyou, and it might not fit your taste but.....since 1 month ago I have been practicing.....I’m proud of this one.....is it a no?”

Aah, I see.....

So there was something like that.

Uwaih.....I forgot about it.....

No, but that was my true feelings. Even now I would rather eat my own cooking. This alone I can’t deny.

Though at that time, I was wary of Koyomi, so I unintentionally.....

I wasn’t intending on refusing this though.....

Uwaih.....This is completely my fault, isn’t it.

“Ah—, no, it wasn’t as if I don’t want to eat this, I was just thinking that it might have been better to make my own lunch box.....And if I don’t have my own lunchbox and you offered it to me, I wasn’t going to refuse it.....”

“Eh.....”

“Etto, that’s why, thank you. For preparing this for me. Is it fine if I eat it?”

“Is, is it really fine? The food in the store might taste better, you know?”

“But, this is Koyomi’s handmade cooking, it’s not like anyone can eat it, I’m going to get the lunchbox filled with the most love in the world from Koyomi. There’s nothing happier than this.”

“Is, is that so.....But, to eat a lunch box in a school festival.”

“For me, this lunch box is the same as the one from a 5 star restaurant. I’m really grateful for this, thank you. It was the first time I got to eat something like this.”

“U, Un! I made it with love! Please eat it!”

“Aah.”

Koyomi was smiling happily.

As I thought.....that smile fits her better.....

“So, where is it?”

“Ah, I left it in the classroom! I’ll go take it for a while!”

“Eh, Un.”

“Let’s eat in the courtyard! I’ll go ahead.”

“I got it—!”

Koyomi ran towards the classroom.

For now, let’s head to the courtyard.....

This is nice once in a while.....

To get something like a handmade lunch box from your girlfriend. Even though my stomach is empty, my heart felt fulfilled.

Chapter 52

Author’s Note:

It’s hard for me to write about food because I only know about food reports and “jewel boxes”.

I mean, it’s hard for me to write after I’ve eaten.

Ah、 I started using Twitter

<https://mobile.twitter.com/u6DP2t2OjBUFvbK>

“Is, is it weird?”

“Un, it looks delicious.”

I'm looking at the lunchbox Koyomi prepared at the courtyard.
It looks nice, and it also smells nice. It really looks like it would be delicious if eaten.

"Then, can I start eating now?"

"U, Un!"

"Thanks for the food—"

"Feel free....."

Among them, there are three partitions some of them which are onigiri, egg soup, and a miniature hamburger steak with fried burdock, spinach and sausage.

I start with the standard egg first.

The egg has the taste of the dashi(soup stock) flavored in it, and the taste spreads across my mouth.

The next is the Hamburger steak.

The hamburger has gotten cold but the taste of the meat soup firmly spreads across it, gradually warming my mouth with its taste. By the time I swallowed it, my mouth was completely covered with the hamburger steak. I have a desire for rice now.

“Un! This is amazing, it’s delicious!”

“Really!?”

“This really tastes good! It’s filling my mouth with delight! Even though my heart was already filled, now even my stomach is desiring more……!”

“Th, thank goodness……”

When I glanced at her, Koyomi looked a little insecure, and she controlled her relieved expression with both of her hands, tears were almost flowing out.

“Eh, Ko, Koyomi……?”

“I don’t have the confidence that I could do well……”

“That”’s not true. This takes time right? Thank you for going through all that trouble, okay?”

“But……Kouyou was pretty strict on food……I would like it to be as delicious as possible……”

“Un! It’s the best!”

“Ehehe……Thank you……”

“Me too.”

“By, by the way!”

“Nn?”

“Can.....can you teach me how to cook?”

“But you are good enough.....”

“But not yet! It’s not number one for Kouyou right?”

“We, well.....”

There’s no choice if it’s like this. She practiced that much just for my sake, I only have to teach her to adjust it a little bit.

“That’s why.....certainly, one day I’ll be your best.....that’s why.....won’t you teach me?”

“Nn—.....if Koyomi becomes the best, then I won’t want to separate from you, you know? If that’s fine with you.....”

“Of course! Everything will go well! Then, how did you make this egg?”

“Nn—, I saved the broth from the previous night? If you’re going to make a soup-based dish the night before, get some of the well taken ones.....Then you can just practice until it became tender and soft, did you put something in the middle of it?”

“Something?”

“Just like a Ryotei(Traditional Japanese Restaurants). Don’t they use the walleye pollack roe usually?”

“Aah—, I see.....”

As I was talking to Koyomi, my chopsticks wasn’t stopping.

I was putting the food to my mouth in succession one by one, and by the end of it I finished all of it.

And so, we chatted a bit after that, and it was about time to look around.

“Then I’ll wash it.....”

“No, it’s fine. Can you just return it like that?”

“Eh, but...”

“I was the one who cooked on my own accord, so I can’t let you do that.”

“U, Un.....Then, I’ll take that kindness.”

I lost to Koyomi’s vigor and handed over the box to Koyomi.

“Well then, I’ll return to the classroom now, please wait here.”

“I got it.....Ah, Koyomi!”

“Nn?”

I quickly called out to Koyomi who was about to return to the classroom.

“Umm, the lunchbox, thank you.”

“Un!”

“In the end, the food that I make on my own is more delicious but.....Today, Koyomi’s lunchbox is the best! The one I liked the most!”

“Eh.....Thank you.....”

Koyomi’s face became red and she quickly ran away.

The best, huh.....

It's hard to separate it simply.....

◇◇◇

“Then, where should we go first?”

“Nn—, for the time being I'm done with foods I guess? I'm just going to hang out in the school building.”

“Un, let's do that!”

As I came back with Koyomi and entered indoors, I was looking around the area that I haven't seen before.

Haunted house———

“Kyaahhh!”

“Ahaha, you look so frightened Koyomi.”

“A, after all.....”

Koyomi was holding on to my arm without letting go.

“It's just something a group of high school students made.....”

“Ah, Kouyou-chan!”

“Eh, Nene-san.....why are you dressing as a monster?”

“Kouyou-chan.....you are such a good men.”

.....Gulp

“It made me feel like eating youuuuu!”

“Ky, Kyaaaaaaa!”

“Eh, wait, Kouyou! Don’t leave me alone!”

“.....Gulp”

“Kyaaaaaaa!”

◇

“Mou—! That’s cruel! Leaving me alone like that!”

“So, sorry.....”

Why is Nene-san.....

Or rather, his eyes were different from usual. It was a serious expression. It's no longer a haunted house but a monster house.....

.....Burr!

A chill ran through my body.

If I hadn't run, would he have attacked me for real.....

In the planetarium———

“Kouyou! It's a handmade planetarium!”

“Are you interested in that? Then should we try going in?”

“Un!”

◇

“Uwaih.....! Pretty—! Hey, isn't this amazing, Kouyou!”

“.....”

“.....Kouyou?”

“Zzz.....”

“!?”

◇

“Mou! It’s cruel of you to suddenly sleep!”

“I’m sorry, sorry. I’m not interested in stars.....”

“You should have said so first!”

“Because Koyomi looked like she really wanted to go.....”

“Then you should have stayed awake!”

“It’s just as you say.....”

Drama———

“It’s Romeo and Juliet with a happy ending!”

“Hee—, it looks interesting—. Do you want to go watch it?”

“.....Don't sleep this time alright?”

“I understand.....”

◇

“Thank you very much—!”

“It was interesting right! Kouyou!”

“.....”

“.....Kouyou?”

“Gusu.....Higu.....Uu.....I was moved.....Gusu.....Uu.....”

“!!?”

Target Shooting———

“Marksmanship—! Kouyou, let's go!”

“Un.”

◇

BanBanBan!

“Nn—, I got it in the first try.....How about you, Kouyou?”

“.....”

“Kouyou?”

Ban!

“First rank~! Congratulations!”

“I can’t tell you that my dad taught me how to shoot at the shooting range over there at the beach house in Hawaii right.”

“!!!?”

And like that, the time passes and the end of the school festival is about to come.....

“Hey—hey—! Where should we go next!?”

“Ah—, Koyomi.....I want to go our class at the end, is that okay?”

“Aah, the conclusion is about to come! It’s okay, let’s go!”

“Un.”

I walked together with Koyomi and we started to talk about our memories of the festival.

When the sun begins to set and the sky turns orange.....

When I looked at Koyomi's smiling face as it was illuminated by the sunset,

A lot of things happened, but above anything else it's great that she's happy.....

Author's Note:

It was not connected to the topic this time but I suddenly thought of something.

It's weird when I called it myself, but what is RINE?

How do I pronounce it? In my image, I feel like I have to roll my tongue.

I think he's saying "RINE". RINE.

"Do you do RINE? Let's exchange contacts!"

"RINE? Okay!"

Or,

"I'll RINE you when I get back home."

“Oke, RINE me as fast as possible okay—”

Thereupon,

“Do you have Line?”

“What is Line? RINE?”

Or is it the pronunciation of the word “mount”?

But we also call smart phones smart phones, not smart phones.

Maybe it’s a romanized reading of the name.

Like Rine or Line.

I modified it so as not to infringe on copyrights, but I wonder what the world over there would look like in other applications.

For example

Pardon & Donaiya

Padu dona for short.

I’ve heard it back, donaiyanen. It’s so destructive!

Mont Blanc Straight

Monstrous for short.

This one’s out if you abbreviate it.

Chapter 53

“It’s a little bit fast but it’s just the right time for dinner! I’m hungry after walking around for the whole day!”

“Un, that’s right.”

We went back to our class.

“Or rather, is it okay?”

“What is?”

“Because the shop is going to close soon. There would be no one left at this time, and most of the staff would be resting.....can we order when it’s like that?”

“Ah, that. I already reserved beforehand—”

“Ah, is that so.....but there’s nobody here?”

“I just have to ring the bell here and they’ll come. More importantly, what do you want to order?”

“Eh, Un.....have you decided Kouyou?”

“Un.”

“Then, let’s order together.”

“I got it. Or rather, I would like to eat that way.”

“Ah, is that so.....what is it?”

“I was looking forward to it. Should I ring the bell now?”

“Un!”

——Ding-ding

Koyomi rang the bell.

And the door opened as usual, and a girl appeared.

“Eh! That girl is.....”

“What’s your order?”

“Ka, Kaede-chan.....?”

That’s right. The girl who is serving us currently right now is Kaede, my sister.

I got her agreement with 10000 yen.

“.....Why?”

“I asked her to do this. Kaede, the usual.....”

“Yes! Then, please look forward to this! Sister-in-law!”

After she said that, the door that Kaede entered the door that opened once more.

“Sis, Sister-in-law.....Ehehe. Ah, is this like a surprise?”

“That’s right, since its the anniversary and all, are you having fun?”

“Un! Thank you!”

“Fufu.....”

As we waited for the food to come, we started talking about the school festival again.

And like that, 5 minutes passed. The first bout of food was brought to the table.

“Are? It’s fast—”

“Well, it’s because there’s not much customers at this time of the day.”

“Here, thanks for waiting! First off is, chawanmushi! Well then!”

Kaede left right after she left the food on the table.

Koyomi opened the lid of the chawanmushi happily, her eyes sparkling.

“It has a nice smell~! Looks delicious—! Let’s eat this quickly!”

“You’re right.”

“” Thanks for the food.””

We united our hands together in graditude and Koyomi brought the food to her mouth.

“It tastes good—!”

“I’m glad you feel that way.”

“.....A-re? Did we have this in our menu?”

“I wonder.”

“Well, whatever!Nn—! Delish—!”

And like that, after she finished the chawanmushi, the next batch of food arrives.

“Here! Miso soup! Warm up your body with this!”

After that, Koyomi started with the miso soup.

“Ama, this is amazing.....the taste is flavourful, and the dashi goes well with it too.....the materials are also good.....”

And like that, after she drank all the soup, she stayed still for a while, and more food come along the way.

“Here, next is sushi!”

“Hmm? But sushi is not in the menu right?”

“Well, well, just eat it.”

“That’s right!.....Nn, this is delicious too! Somehow, it feels more extravagant than the 100 yen sushi—!”

“Oh, you’re surprisingly sharp.”

And when she finished eating all of the sushi.

“Okay! next is a special Wagyu beef! And after that is potato salad and white rice.”

“A-re? Wagyu beef is not in the menu right?”

“Well, well.”

After I said that, Koyomi steadily ate the meat.

“It’s soft~.....the meat soup huh.....”

“The rice is.....completely different from the rice at home~ I feel like I can keep eating this forever.....”

“This salad feels the sweetest.....”

“Okay! Next is the tea!”

“It’s a little hot.....but it’s delicious—.....”

“Fufu.....are you satisfied?”

“Un! This is the best!”

“There are desserts after this but, is your stomach okay?”

“I have a different stomach for desserts! I can still go on!”

“Thank goodness.....”

For the time being, the staple food ends here with this.

The rest are desserts.

I personally was looking forward to this the most.

“Here! First off, the strawberry daifuku.”

“Sweet~! Delicious~!”

“Delish.”

“Next is the pudding! With cream on top of it!”

“Sweet! Delicious!”

“Delish”

“Next is the parfait!”

“The fruits are all sweet.....”

“Uha—! This is the best!”

“Hot cocoa and terrine chocolates!”

“Ah, this is too sweet~!”

“Delicious.....It’s so delicious I feel like crying.....”

“The last one is coffee to clean your palate!”

“De, delicious.....”

“Bitter.....”

Both of us were already full, thanks to the full course of sweets, even though each one was small.

We both sipped our coffees as if to soak up the afterglow of the food.

“Hey, hey, this is all filled with menus that I haven’t seen in our stores.....It was very delicious but this is not made by an amateur right?”

“Well it’s something like that, more or less they are pros. Both of them.”

“Eh, could it be.....”

“That’s right, the food that was served today, and the desserts were all created by us!”

“Koyomi-chan, it’s been a long time!”

“Mother-in-law! Father-in-law!”

They seemed to really like Koyomi, and they said yes without any resistance.

That’s right. I bowed my head to them for this.

“Awawawa.....It, it was very delicious! I was moved!”

“Fufufu, that’s good!”

“Ah, and Koyomi.....”

“Nn?”

Kaede handed me a bag from besides.

“Yesterday, there was a time when I wasn’t there right? I went off to buy this at the time. A surprise.”

As I said that, I handed her the red bag.

“Eh, Ah, I’m sorry.....I didn’t know anything.....”

“It’s fine, I have received plenty from you. Besides that, here! Take it.”

“Th-, thank you.....can I open it?”

“Nn, go ahead.”

Koyomi’s face grows relaxed as she received the presents for me and opened the bag.

“Etto, this is a hankerchief!? It’s cute~”

“Really? Thank goodness.....”

“Ah, there’s something inside!.....what is this?”

What Koyomi took out was a long and narrow box.

“Well, go ahead and open it.”

“Un!”

Koyomi opened the smaller ones first.

“Pre, pretty.....”

Inside was a ring. (TLN: I somehow had a feeling this was coming...)

“Ah, it’s engraved with the words Koyomi in latin!”

“Un!”

“And the other is!?”

And like that, she opened the other box.

It was another ring in the box. The design was the same but the color was different.

“Ko, Kouyou was engraved here.....”

“Un, we match.”

“Th, thank you.....”

“Un.”

“Thi, I wonder what is this.....this is.....”

Koyomi opened the last one where there was a necklace inside.

“Cu, cute.....”

“Should we wrap up soon?”

I take the necklace from Rekizuki, put my hand around her neck, and put it on.

It looks good on her.

“Oh, thanks,”

“Well, it’s not that expensive.”

“That’s not.....important.....Ugh..... Hiccup.....thank you.....ugh”

“..... Are you a crybaby?”

“No, I’m not.....!”

Koyomi received my present while crying and smiling at the same time.

“Koyomi.....”

“.....Gusu.....n?”

“I think I’m pretty annoying if I do say so myself.....I’m not completely in love with Rekizuki yet either...and Koyomi knows that, even though you knew.....you still beared with it.....”

“Un.....”

“That’s why.....this is my present to you. Koyomi.....”

“.....”

“Thank you for everything.”

“Un!”

I say with a grateful smile.

In response, Koyomi, while shedding a large number of tears, also smiled back at me.

The surprise ended in success.

Chapter 54

(Koyomi's POV)

Author's Note:

I'm sorry, it's a little bit short.

And the contents are on the lighter side.

I'll try hard again today.

Kouyou's surprise present session has ended along with the school cultural festival without incident.

The sun has started to go down, and the dark sky is a sign of the starting of the closing party.

I have a promise to dance with Kouyou.

After I talked with my friends, I went to the place where we are supposed to meet.

"Sorry for being late, Kouyou."

"Uun....don't worry about it. More importantly, let's hurry? It's about to start soon."

While holding hands, we went off to the middle where there is a campfire.

"Well then, everyone! Thanks for your hard work in the school cultural festival—! The last festival will be this closing party! Invite the person you like, and dance freely to your heart's content!"

♪ ~ ♪ ~ ~ ♪ ♪ ~ ♪ ~ ~ ♪ ~ ~ ~

The music starts to play. And we danced in accordingly to that as we smile.

“Kouyou!”

“Nn?”

“Today was extremely fun! Uun, not just today. When I’m with Kouyou, I’m always having fun! It will probably be like that from now on too! Thank you! And, please take care of me!”

“Okay, okay. Me too.”

There was a lot of things that happened in the school cultural festival.

I also met Kouyou’s family.

And I also saw Kouyou wearing a butler outfit after cutting his hair and wearing contacts.

When I saw the girls going “Kya, kya!” when they saw that, I felt jealous.

I gave him a lap-pillow. His sleeping face was really cute at that time.

We also ate like a couple, and walked around the school festival.

I stayed at his house! And we even shared the same bed.

Rumi-chan was cool in the beauty contest.

In the muscle championship too, I don’t really understand but it was somewhat amazing.

In the Tenkaichi Budokai, Manamoto gave his best.

I was very scared when Sakai kidnapped me.

Kouyou came to save me, and fought off Sakai. I was so happy that my tears overflowed.

I slightly remembered it. But Kouyou probably gave me a lap pillow.

Everyone stayed in my house. But they immediately went to sleep though.

He also ate my lunch-box(bentou) happily.

As the surprise, he got his parents to make the food, I ate a lot. Moreover, it's free of charge!

I also received a present.

The design was a cute handkerchief. It seems like a waste to use it though, when my old one became worn-out I usually bought a new one. But, he's so thoughtful and kind.

The ring. The same design but with different color. And even our names were engraved in it. It was the first matching present I got from Kouyou. I was so happy.

The necklace. I can't wear it to school but I brought it with me everyday, and I always wore it during holidays! Just now when I wore I also felt my heart racing.

And then today,

Finally we arrived at our trip destination! And the promise to kiss!

Happiness filled my body from head to toe.

And like that, the closing party ended and the school festival closes its curtains.

◇◇◇

“Surprisingly, cleaning the aftermath of the school festival is tiring~”

Kouyou suddenly started talking while we were taking care of the aftermath.

“Ah—, that's true.”

She agreed with me.

“The more you prepare for cleaning up, the more tedious it becomes, and the more you regret your efforts.”

“Ah—, I understand that feeling—. Now that you say it, it kinda feel regretful. It wasn't as if I want fun things to never happened in the first place though.”

“UnUn.”

“Ah—, you might be right.....”

“The magic of the cultural festival or something?”

“It didn’t go that well though.”

“Cruel!”

It’s true that it’s kind of dull after the festival. What’s the definite cause for this?
Well even if you ask me, it’s just languid.

“Well, even so! They will announce the sales soon!? We sold 1.5 times more
than the winner of the previous year! We will definitely win this!”

“Un! That’s right! I’m looking forward to the trip! Hey! Kouyou?”

“.....Nn.”

Ufufufufu. I can kiss him—! And from Kouyou!

“Oh, it’s about time soon!”

“Okay.”

“Un!”

We went to the gymnasium with all the members of our class.

◇◇◇

“Ehh—, we will then announce the sales now. To save time, I would like to announce the winning class only, as everyone will receive a printout with details later. The prize is a 3-day/2-night trip for the whole class! First up, the freshmen.”

The freshman’s class who won shouted loudly, but I honestly didn’t register their voice as my heart was beating so badly.

Our class was the fourth one.

“Eh—, the winner is ——”

——Doki doki, doki doki.....

“———Congratulations! The 7th class!”

.....

.....

.....

.....Eh?

Chapter 55

Author’s Note:

Thanks for waiting!

Finally the end of section 2!

“Well~, that was regrettable.....”

“How vexing—!”

The announcement for the class who won was already finished, and it wasn't us who won but the 7th class.

I took a look at the details and it was true that we lost only by a slight margin.

“Haah—, well it can't be helped! Let's go throw a closing party with a yakiniku party!”

“Ooh! That sounds nice!”

“Then at 6:30, we'll go to a yakiniku restaurant one stop away—!”

“” Okay—!””

And like that, we decided on having a party, and went home to prepare.

I called out to Koyomi who was nearby.

“Shall we go home too?”

“Are? Kouyou is the one who invited this time, it's unexpected. Or ratherm this is the first time right?”

“Ah—, now that you say it, that's true.”

“Why?”

“Nn—, there wasn't any particular deep reason. It's just that you look a little down.”

“Ah—, I see.....regarding that matter, well, as expected.....I was shocked for having my expectations mistaken.....”

“As I thought.....”

“Ah, but it’s fine okay? Originally we only promised if we won the overall victory. Besides, I was shocked but now I was somewhat filled with happy feelings maybe.”

“Why?”

“Because.....in this festival, I already received a lot in this festival. If I got the kiss I would have been more happier but I was already more than satisfied today!”

Koyomi told me that while smiling.

That smile was probably a lie. She was probably just trying to not make me worry.

“Well, let’s go home?”

“Un.”

“Ah—, I’m looking forward to the party.”

“Yeah.”

.....

.....

◇◇◇

“Eh—, well then, Class 4, thanks for your hard work in the festival—~”

“Haiii!”

“Cheers!”

“” Cheers~!!””

“Meat~” “No, that’s mine~” “Don’t mess with me, it’s mine!”
——Buzz

The closing party for our class started.

Our earnings was pretty high so we ordered some pretty expensive meat.

Basically, the ones who got along together gathered along but for some reason the ones on my table are the members of Kami7, besides me is Akira, and in front of me is Koyomi.

“Kouyou, Kouyou! Ahnn!”

“Eh—.....”

What is this person saying all of a sudden.

“Oh, do it, do it!”

“I don’t want to....”

“Isn’t it fine!”

“Koyomi.....”

“Nn?”

“.....Are you drunk?”

“There’s no way I would drink! I’m completely sober!”

“Then why.....”

“It was the remains of the school festival hype!”

“Eh.....But I’m sober though.....”

“Quickly! It’s fine! It was the lingering hype after the festival! I want to be spoiled!”

“Oi, oi. Just do it Kouyou!”

“Then how about you do it, Akira?”

“Then it won’t have any meaning! I want Kouyou to do it!”

“In the first place, to do Ahn with a yakiniku.....”

“It’s, fine!”

“Haah.....Okay okay. Ahn”

“Ahnn!”

Koyomi opened her mouth and I put the meat inside her mouth.

After Koyomi savored the flavor of the food, she thanked me with a smile on her face.

As I thought, Koyomi is still a beautiful girl even when spoiled, I was captivated by her cuteness.

“Ah—, Kouyou-kun was captivated by me~”

“Eh? Then I won’t look at you anymore then.”

“I’m sorry for teasing you. The truth is I was so happy. Please look at me more!”

“Okay, okay. In moderation, okay.”

The tension is too high.

Akira and the others who saw it made fun of us.

“So Kouyou has started to flirt too—”

“I did not though.”

“But the previous you wouldn’t have smiled at that right. In your case, laughing already counts as flirting.....”

“Ah—, that might be true.....I was more.....”

In the beginning, I didn’t have that much interest in these kind of things.

I was just interested in what a lover is like.

I don’t know when it started, but I bonded with her, and I became interested in her, and even though I’m not in love with her now, I’m definitely starting to be attracted to her, and my heart have started to allow it.

If I didn’t include Akira, she is the one I’m closest to and also one of the opposite sex.

“These days, the number of people who give a shit about your relationship has dwindled to a trickle.”

“It’s true that I still receive gazes of jealousy every now and then but there were almost no ones who complaint anymore.....”

“You introduced Koyomi to your family right? That probably have sealed the deal.....”

“Hahaha, that might be true.”

And the fact that I can meet with Koyomi like this, I’m probably the lucky one here.

◇◇◇

“Then, dissolve!”

“” Okay—.””

“Goodbye—” “See you—” “It was delicious—!”

And nothing of particular note happened after the party, It was an unpleasant reminder that our cultural festival was over.

“Koyomi, can we talk a little?”

“Nn? It’s fine—”

After I invited Koyomi, and we walked together side by side.

And like that, we went to the same park 1 month ago.

“Ah, this place is nostalgic.....”

“Aah, the same place as the one where we did the confession.....”

“The festival has ended huh.....”

“That’s right—.....I won’t sober up yet—!”

“Fufufu.....if you don’t get over it soon, you won’t have any motivation to do anything you know?”

“It should be safe until today! Or rather, Kouyou won’t feel like doing everything when you woke up right.”

“You understand me so well.....”

“I’m your girlfriend after all!”

Koyomi puffed out her chest proudly.

“Koyomi.....”

“Nn?”

Koyomi responded to my voice immediately.

“Nn!?”

I touched Koyomi’s lips.

It was just around 2 seconds.

“Nn? Eh, ah, eh.....?”

I separated our face, and when I look at Koyomi, it looks like she couldn’t really understand the situation, and her face turned red.

“This doesn’t have anything to do with my promise. I do it just because I want to. Sorry, it looks like I still haven’t woke up from the fever from the festival.”

“Eh.....?”

Koyomi’s face turned red, and her consciousness is wavering.

We won’t make any progress like this. Well, her house is nearby so it should be fine.

“Then, I’ll go home now okay? Please go home after you calm down okay?”

As I said that, I walked towards the entrance of the park.

“Ah, wait, wait! Kouyou!”

I stopped as Koyomi called out to me and looked towards her direction.

“Um, that.....thank you!”

“Un! Well then!”

“Goodbye!”

And like that I left the park and headed home.

This is the genuine end to the festival between Koyomi and me.

Chapter 56 – Volume 3

Author’s Note:

It has finally started! The last section! I’ll give it my best so please support me!

Twitter

<https://mobile.twitter.com/u6DP2t2OjBUFvbK>

“Viva! A big baseball game!!!”

“”””Uohhhhh!!!””””

Noi, it’s so noisy.....

It has been 2 weeks since the end of the school festival!

After that, Kouyou’s and Koyomi’s relationship doesn’t particularly progress and the event during the second semester is approaching!

“Yosh, you guys! Any fighting spirits!?”

“”””Uohhhhh!!!””””

The one who let out the voice was just the guys but there were quite a considerable amount of girls who hyped things up too.

They are probably still bearing their frustrations from the school festival.

The school inter-class ball game!

That is a competition in which you make a team with the members of your class, and compete for the overall victory with the other classes!

And the one who boasts the highest athletic ability in our class is Akita Noboru!

“Yosh! First off! The announcement of the games! After discussing it with the PE committees, the boys will play soccer and the girls will play basketball!”

“”Ohhhh!!””

“Whoa, whoa, whoa. Calm down you guys! First let’s have a discussion with the boys! Half of the gymnasium and a third of the grounds are free for use. You may use them for practice and so on if you need to!!”

“”Oooooohh!!””

Our school puts rather a lot of effort into ball games.....or events in general, so we’re free to leave the classroom and practice during our discussion time!

“Yosh, have all the boys gathered? Well then, let’s change our clothes right away and have an assembly! We’ll start by deciding the regulars!”

“Ooohhhhh!!”

And so, we went on a large group.

◇◇◇

“First! Watch the most basic of shots! This is just a penalty kick, kick it as hard as you can!”

“Yosh!” “Let’s go!” “Uoohh!”

Thus, the class lines up in a row and kicks one by one.

As expected, no one was fierce enough to miss this, and everyone put it in as normal.

“Next~, Kouyou!”

“.....Okay.”

My turn has finally came. In this case, all you have to do is put it in, so you can cut corners..... as you see fit.

“Kouyou! Do your best!”

“Eh—.....”

Just like Akita, Akira who was a judge told me.

“If you held back, you’re going to treat me Max.”

“Eh, Eeehh.....”

Max is a major hamburger chain.

The price is surprisingly reasonable, usually only about one coin, but I don’t like the idea of buying a drink.

I can’t help it. I’ll kick it as hard as I can.

I put the ball down and take a few steps back.

From there, I made a run to the ball and kick as hard as I can while keeping my eyes on the ball.

“Fuh!”

The ball flies with great force to the goal.

“Phew~, that was strong!”

“” Oooh! Amazing—!””

“So you can do it—, Kouyou.”

“Well, I train a little.....”

“Fufufu, I count on you! Kouyou!”

“What for?”

“Your performance! You will be one of the regulars! I was convinced after seeing your shoot just now! ”

“Eh? No, all I did was put the ball where it was supposed to be. That doesn’t really tell you anything right.....”

“But you are strong!”

“Why does it matter?”

“Ba-ka. You are fast on your feet right!”

“Well yeah.”

“You have stamina too! You got A in all of the examinations for endurance! I already understand now that you have good athletic abilities!”

“Ah, that.....”

“That’s right! There’s no way I wouldn’t use a person as capable as you right!?”

“Aah, I see. That’s true.....”

“I’m not going to let you get away with it this time like I did with the gym festival. If you’re chosen as a regular, don’t say you’ll take a day off.”

“Aah, Un. It’s fine I guess.”

“Hmm? That’s unusual.....”

“Eh? Akira told me that he won’t let me go regardless.”

“No, even so I thought you would be a bit more rebellious.....”

“Nn—, well, the condition at the time is different after all.”

“Aah! I see, so it’s Koyomi! It’s true that she has a good athletic abilities! Even you wouldn’t take a break on the day when your girlfriend is working hard! So Koyomi have affected Kouyou to this extent!”

“Aah, that might be the case.”

“Okay, the next is dribbling! Line up once more!”

Akira teased me, and we lined up once again.

The dribble test will be against Akira, you just have to block him. Of course by your feeling.

“Okay, next is Kouyou!”

“Okay.....”

I placed the ball in front of me. First I dribble normally, then I avoided the cones. Finally, when I dodged the cones, I shoot the ball and that's it.

I did a couple of light bounces and ankle rolls as preparation.

It's true that I can't take a break while my girlfriend Koyomi is trying her best. So I'm not going to rest, no matter how this turns out.

“Fuu—.....”

I exhaled and look ahead.

Let's get serious!

I kicked the ball and kept going.

The dribble was so brilliant that it made the boys in my class open their mouths and not close them.

Yes, it was a dribble that was too amazing.

“Ko, Kouyou.....”

“A, amazing.....”

“Where did he.....”

“Who on earth taught him that.....”

If I were to compare my dribbling to art, it would be a work of art, like a Picasso painting. Top quality.

“” You're so bad!””

Yes, an overly vivid and messy dribble.

I know it's artistic and something amazing like a Picasso painting, but it's just so messed up.

What the hell is that? It's crazy! It was a scene where the main character was totally awesome!

“Kouyou, you.....”

“What is it.....?”

I’m not sure what to make of it.

“So you are hopeless at sports too.....”

“You’re so noisy.”

That’s why I hate this. I don’t like physical education.

Chapter 57

“Buhaha, Ahaha.....Kouyou, you! Dahaha!”

“Akira, you’re laughing too much.....”

Me, Akira and Akita, along with Koyomi came to this big food-chain restaurant called Max.

“No~, to think that you are that bad at soccer.....”

“Or rather, you are not athletic.”

“Eh—, was it really that bad?”

“Koyomi, it can’t even be called bad anymore. Just remembering it.....Bufu! No.....I can’t help but laugh.....Gufuh!”

“Haah.....Akira, I’m about to get angry soon you know?”

“No.....Sorry, sorry.”

“So? What are you going to talk about?”

“Yeah! That’s right! What matter do you have until you interfered with our date?”

“Koyomi—? There wasn’t any promise to go on a date though—? The one who is intruding is Koyomi right—?”

The correct version was that Akira and Akita called out to me when I was about to go home and asked me to go to Max. And as Koyomi saw that, she accompanied us.

“Just when we thought we could use Kouyou. His body also left much to be desired—.....but to think we can’t use him—.....it’s kind of wasteful right?”

“I don’t know. I refuse.”

“Well, don’t be like that, alright?”

“In the first place, you’ve seen it yourself right. How bad I was. You definitely can’t ask me to perform like that.”

“Yeah—! That’s why I’m troubled…….”

“Why do you need to fuss about this to that extent…….”

“After all, right?”

“Un, the shock from having the expectations or rather…….”

“Even if you say that, the one who put the expectations on your own is you…….”

“Yeah! That’s why I have decided! Because the one who have arbitrarily decided to put the expectations are us! We have the responsibility for having that expectations to the end!”

“Which means?”

“From now until the day of the competition……we will train!!”

“Iiihh!”

“He—, what’s the matter Kouyou?”

“Eh, I don’t want to though?”

“” Why!””

“That’s just what you forced on me by saying it’s your responsibility right? ”

“So it was found out…….”

“Well of course.”

I anticipated it in the morning regarding after classes.

This is my fundamental style.

There’s no way I would let myself be disturbed this easily/

I’ll fight to the bitter end.

“I’ll buy you anything you want at the cafe!”

“Yosh, let’s do it. Special training! Let’s play soccer!”

“Everyone—”

“I remember~!”

I gave in pretty easily but I had no regrets.

Special training is important after all. UnUn. Let’s read my grandfather’s secret books on soccer and study it.

“Yosh! Then we’re going to start our practice immediately tomorrow morning!”

“Ah, can I join too?”

“Ah—, Koyomi is athletic so there’s no problem! Yosh! If Koyomi is here to cheer then Kouyou might try his best!”

“Okay then, let’s go for it!”

“” Ooh—!””

“Ooh—.....”

And like that, we started our hellish training the next morning.

◇◇◇

The next morning I came to the school ground as instructed by the two of them.

“Kou—you—kun—? Bold of you to be this late huh—?”

“Aah, sorry, sorry.”

I was about 30 minutes late.

“We’ve only got a little more practice left!”

“But I’m still doing my best right?”

“Ah, certainly.....wait, shut up! Late is late right.....”

“I’m sorry.....”

“Haah.....well whatever. For the time being you can start warming up—!”

“Yes, yes.”

For the time being, I did the simple warming up exercises that we usually did in PE classes while Akira and gathered to Akira and the others.

“Okay, first off, the most basic one, kicking the ball while running! Well, before that, run through this 50 meters course first.”

The width of one course is the same as that of a normal track used for track and field.

Well I’ll just run as I’m required to.

I ran as Akira started counting.

“Oh! 6.3 seconds! As expected, you really are fast.....”

“Fuuh—, well yeah,”

If it’s just running then I have plenty of confidence.

“So next time, run while kicking the ball. Stay on course, of course.”

“Okay—”

I placed the ball at the starting point and let your breathing calm down.

There’s no problem. I kicked it straight ahead, and I just have to move ahead. It’s easy.

“Ready.....Start!”

As Akira started giving the sign, I started running.

The only difference from before was the presence or absence of the ball. It’s a piece of cake. I’m not that bad at it, as expected.

“Okay! Goal.....32 seconds.”

“.....”

“Why does the time go up by 5 times?!”

“.....I wonder?”

Chapter 58

Author’s Note:
We came this far!

The introduction of a new character this far in the story!

It's been a week since I started my hellish training. There were only three days left until the ball game!

"As if I'll let you!"

Akita stands in front of me.

I feint left and right, turning and dodging while keeping the ball outside.

"Yosh!"

"Tsu! Damn it!"

I dribbled just like that and brought it towards the goal.

"I'll defend this place to the death!"

"I'll make sure of it!"

Akira was in the goal.

I kick the ball up to the top left of the goal.

"I got it!"

Akira went to get the ball.

"You're too careless!"

"Tsu! What!"

The ball curved wide before entering the goal.

It went straight into the bottom right corner of the goal as if it had been sucked in.

"Beep, beep, beep! Goal! Kouyou wins!"

"Yay—!"

"As expected of Kouyou! So cool!"

Koyomi hugged me as she said that and I received her embrace gently.

“You really became good at this!”

“It’s all thanks to you. Thank you.”

As I said that I was patting Koyomi’s head as she nodded happily.

At first, the training session seemed to be going nowhere, but Momiji was a genius. Thanks to everyone’s hellish coaching, I’ve improved to the point where I’m now in the “good” category. Well, that’s only for soccer.”Phew~! Both of you are so steamy, hugging each other at a place like this!”

“Mou! Stop it Akira!”

“She became embarrassed.....but Kouyou have become softer to Koyomi too—”

“Aah, that might be true.....”

It’s true that there has been no progress in their relationship since that festival. If you ask me, not really, but my resistance to Koyomi sure has gone down quite a bit.

“Ah, then can we go on a date today after a while!?”

“Ah—, Kouyou have improved quite a bit, so isn’t it fine?”

“Yay! It’s okay right? Kouyou!”

“Well, I don’t particularly have any plans so it’s okay.”

“Yosh! Then how about we eat dinner together? Do you want to go eat?”

“Okay.....”

“Yay!”

And like this, the afterschool date that we haven’t done in a long time started.

◇◇◇

“Where should we go until dinner?”

“Ah—, I have a movie that I have been wanting to watch recently.....is that not okay?”

“Uun. Then shall we go?”

“Un!”

After school, Koyomi and I decided to go into a nearby shopping mall. We entered the mall, and had just decided the movie that we would watch.

Come to think of it.....This is something I always saw in a commercial.....

Well, it probably won't fit Koyomi's interest so I should probably come here myself next time.

“Eh, this was the movie that I wanted to watch.....”

“Ah, as I thought!?”

“Nn? Could it be that you were trying to be considerate?”

The movie that I wanted to watch was the live-action adaptation of a game.

The title is “Katy's Curious Voyage Ship Killing”

It's an action comedy movie with gags and tears.

“Does Koyomi like these kind of things?”

The movie she pointed to was “1000 Petals”, a touching and heart-warming romantic movie.

“Ah—, I wanted to see that too but.....”

“Then...”

“That's not it! Kouyou likes game right? I saw you playing this game, so I tried it too and got hooked. So I've been wanting to watch this for a long time! I've been wanting to watch this for a long time, and since Kouyou seems to be interested in it, I thought we could watch it together anyways”

“Aah, I see.....Then let's go watch it.”

“Un!”

And so the both of us chose the time that matched our schedules and went to the seats that were empty.

“Well then, I’ll go buy some drinks and popcorns.”

“Ah, shall we go together?”

“No, it’s fine. You can just sit down, okay?”

“I see, thank you!”

“You are welcome…….”

I went to the stall myself.

“Thanks for waiting—”

“Okay.”

Koyomi asked for a orange juice, I went for a coke, and I bought some salted popcorn.

I really made her wait quite a while. Apparently it was pretty busy right now, so it took quite a while.

I think Koyomi might be mad at me.

I took the drinks I got from the waitress and went back to Koyomi. When I saw Koyomi, my feet stopped for a moment.

Uwahn.....She’s being picked on.

It’s a pain in the ass. What is this annoying development?

“No, I’m waiting for someone…….”

“Isn’t it fine! I’ve been looking since just now, but nobody is coming.”

“No, the stall…….”

“It’s weird to be in the stall for this long right~. That’s a lie right? We’re just going to play for a while. We won’t get out from the shopping mall! Let’s go!”

Uwahn! Furthermore, an annoying person to deal with. He nonchalantly grabbed her arms.

She looks like she is having trouble. I guess I have to help her.

“Ano—, excuse me. My.”

“What business do you have with my girlfriend?”

When I try to stop him, he calls out before I can.

“Aah?”

I look at him and try to analyze him.

He’s wearing the same uniform as us. I wondered if he was in the same grade.

His hair was neatly set, and he had a distinctly intellectual look about him.

He’s about as tall as Akira, and he’s glaring at the pick-up artist from above.

I don’t know, but he seems to be protecting Koyomi.

If I leave now, I’ll just confuse him, so I’ll just wait here and see what happens.

“What do you want bastard?”

“I told you right? This girl is my girlfriend. I should be asking what you were doing instead.”

“Ha, Haah?”

“Why.....do you grab someone else’s girlfriend’s arm like that.....let go.”

The boy forcefully grabbed the guy’s hand off.

“It hurts! It hurts, it hurts, it hurts!”

He seems like he was grabbing it with quite the force.

“Go away.....Now....”

“Uu.....Che! My bad.....”

When the boy let go of his hands, the other guy went away.

For the time being there were no problems. I guess I’ll go thank him....

I rushed over to Koyomi.

“Ah, I’m sorry regarding my companion.....”

“Ah, Kouyou!”

“Nn? Aah.....so it's Kouyou-kun.....”

“Eh? How do you know me?”

“After all, your girlfriend is Tachibana-san right? Both of you are famous within the school, and the fact that you were dating her makes you very popular too.”

“But even so, to know my name.....”

“I'm at the same school as you guys. I've heard your name a million times. And although you don't seem to know it, you were somewhat famous before you started dating, you know?”

“Ha? Why?”

“The Festival..... aside from Akita-kun, we were warned that there was a guy in Class 4 who was very fast, but he unexpectedly took a day off on the day of the festival. That's why he's famous. And that's not all. He was late to school every day. He doesn't do his homework and falls asleep in class. And yet, he's the guy whose top 30 tests are always posted on the board. how could you be so indifferent towards yourself? There are a lot of factors that can make you pretty famous.”

“Ahaha, it's Kouyou's old habit—?”

Aah, I see.....

It's true that becoming famous thanks to that might be normal when I heard his explanations.

“Aah, I'm sorry. It's quite late but my name is Iseda Tenya. From the 7th class. Nice to meet you?”

Then he holds out his hand to me. I take it and we shake hands.

“Aaah, nice to meet you.....”

“Well then, I'm sorry for interfering with your date, I'll go now.”

“Ah, Aah. Well then.”

“Thank you! Bye-bye.”

“Aah, I'll be excusing myself now.”

And he walked away.

But as he walked past me, he came strangely close, and stopped for a moment when his face was right next to my ear.

“Koyomi is mine.....” (TLN: Why, just why do you have to add another jerk in progress?)

“Tsu.....!”

He just said that and walked away.

I somehow lost the chance to speak and could only watch the back of Iseda as he left.

Chapter 59

Author’s Note:

It’s a little short.

“It was very fun—!”

“UnUn!”

“It’s a comedy that blows away the serious scenes while still retaining the atmosphere of the original work, and it’s a comedy that gets the job done!”

“Kenya’s fight scene was pretty fun too. I’m excited by the full-blown action, but that goofiness in the beginning.”

“When Katy took out the deck brush, the whole place went crazy!”

“To think that that line itself is a foreshadowing, I can’t really believe that.”

I and Koyomi engaged in a lively conversation regarding the movie.

Live-action films tend to be criticized for many things, but for this film, I had to clap my hands, it was a masterpiece.

“And they’re going to make a sequel on top of that!?”

“I’m looking forward to it—”

“Let’s go again together okay!?”

“Okay—”

I casually took out my smartphone and when I checked the time it’s about time to get some food.

“Well then, shall we go eat?”

“Ah, Un, that’s right! Where should we go—?”

“Un—.....”

◇◇◇

“Welcome~!”

“What a nice smell!”

In the end, we decided to go to Kushikatsuya, according to Koyomi’s wish.

Of course it’s not a place like an Izakaya.

After we were shown to our seats, we ordered a few things and waited for them to be brought to us.

“” Thanks for the food.””

“Ufufufufu.”

“What’s the matter? It’s a little bit appalling you know?”

Koyomi started to grin when I sit opposite of her.

“Since we came all the way to eat kushikatsu, why don’t I feed you!”

“Eh, I refuse.”

“Okay, Ahn—?”

“Eh, Eh—.....Ahn—”

Then I open my mouth and Koyomi brought a skewer to my mouth, and I eat it.

“How is it? Is it delicious?”

“Un, it’s delicious.”

“Could it be because of me feeding you~?”

“Nn, that might be true. Should we try to make sure of it?”

“Eh? How?”

“Koyomi should try it too. Like this.”

I turn towards to Koyomi to hand over the skewers.

“Okay, Ahn—”

“Ah, Ahn.....”

Koyomi ate while her face became red.

“How is it?”

“It’s, it’s somehow.....my body became hot, and it’s delicious.....”

“I see, I’m glad.”

I replied while smiling.

Well to be really honest, I don’t think kushikatsu really taste great when it’s sweet.

◇◇◇◇◇

The next day.

“Fuaahh.....Good morning Akira....”

“Osu, you’re always late as usual huh!”

Today I overslept due to various reasons and ended up coming to school during the first period break.

I greeted Akira, who was chatting with me in the hallway, and was about to enter the classroom when he spoke to me from the side.

“Good morning, Kouyou-kun.” (TLN:)

I looked to the side and saw a man who was standing there who looked a little intelligent. I think I saw him somewhere before.....

“Nn—.....how do you know my name?”

“Hah? We met yesterday right?”

“Nn? Yesterday?.....I’m sorry, who were you again?”

It seems like we met yesterday.

But even if he says that, I was so excited from the movie yesterday and I'm not really in a state to think about anyone else, and because of that I slept late yesterday.

And that's why, I won't remember someone that I just had a small conversation with.

"You, did you forget?"

"Un. It seems that way."

"Are you messing around with me? That's just lacking too much common sense."

"Nn—....even if you say that to me. It wasn't today that I forgot something, but yesterday."

"Isn't that worse!"

"And that's why, it's not my fault today. If you want to blame someone, blame the me of yesterday."

"Ha, haah? How do I even blame someone from the past!"

"Eh? That, here! You can't do that you know! Or something like that....."

"Nn, are you stupid?"

“I wonder? I’m still half-asleep so I might be acting a bit weird. I’m going to go sleep so if you have something to say then can you do it at lunch break instead?”

“Nn.....! I got it.....Le-let’s have a proper conversation.”

“Yes, yes.....”

For the time being, I went to my seat and lay my head down, closing my eyes.

That person from earlier.....I feel like I met him somewhere.....

Ah, he said we met yesterday.....

What.....kind of.....conversation.....did we have again.....

“Zzz.....”

And like that I went to a deep sleep.

Chapter 60

“Oi, Kouyou—, let’s eat lunch together—!”

Lunch break, Akira invited me for lunch like usually.

“Ah—, I’m sorry. I have somewhere else to go to today.”

“Eh—.....”

“Ah, by the way that is me—!”

Koyomi intruded from the side.

Since it’s troublesome, I rarely had lunch together with Koyomi. Probably around once a week. Of course together with Akira.

“Eh, aren’t we going to eat together today?”

“Ah—, but I insisted!”

“Koyomi—? What are you talking about—? I don’t remember promising something like that—?”

“Eh—, isn’t it fine once in a while!”

“Yes, yes. Next time okay?”

“Really? Yes!”

Koyomi didn’t say anything as she was happy when I promised her next time. She is easy when she needs to be.

“But it’s unexpected. Who are you going to eat with?”

“Well yeah. But I’m not really eager for this though.”

“? Hoh, well then see you later.”

“Yes, yes.”

And so I walked towards the hallway.

It should be around this time now.....

“Yo, I’m sorry. To have made you wait a while.”

Here it comes.

“No, I would have preferred it if you hadn’t come.”

“Tsu!Is that so.....Then should we start going?”

“Where to?”

“Somewhere where there aren’t many people around, how about the backyard?”

“Okay, okay, I got it.”

And so we moved towards the backyard near the gymnasium.

◇◇◇

“So? What do you want to talk about?”

“Before that, do you really not remember anything about me?”

“Nn, well yeah.”

“First I shall have you remember it then.”

“Nn—.....I feel like I’ve seen you somewhere before but.....”

“Heeh, where?”

“Nn—? If I’m not mistaken somewhere around the park?”

“That’s wrong. That’s definitely someone else.”

“Ah—, I’m sorry. You look like someone I could meet anywhere so I could have mistaken you for someone else.”

“Don’t try to get on my nerves every single time. At the first place, did you went to a park yesterday?”

“Ah, no I didn’t.”

“Are you dumb.....it’s in the cinema. I saved Tachibana-san when she got hit on!”

“Nn—.....?”

“Koyomi is mine.”

“.....Ah! You’re that person from back then!”

I remembered it. Come to think of it, there was someone like that.

“Nn? Koyomi is mine? Which means?”

“I’m telling you you don’t match with Koyomi.”

He glared at me as he said that, brimming with malice. The atmosphere was different from a little while ago.

“Hee—, your character changed quite a bit. Do you have a split personality?”

“You, can you stop making fun of me?”

“I wasn’t really making fun of you though. It’s just that I’m tired of people who don’t even confess looking down on me, and Koyomi is not anyone’s belonging. That kind of thing is already outdated.”

“I’m not like those idiots, I don’t confess unnecessarily. And that was a misinterpretation. Would it be easier to say that Koyomi is my girl?”

“Saying you don’t, but rather you can’t right? Because you’ll get dumped. That’s what creepy about you, just like a stalker.”

“Yes, I know that if I confessed to her, she would have rejected me. That’s why I’m saying I didn’t. Those idiots around here don’t understand that, so they just go for it.”

“No, you’re just twisting facts to be convenient for you. There’s no rule that you have to give up when you got rejected. You’re just scared. That fact won’t change.”

“I would like for you to call it careful instead.”

“Mr. Careful.”

“Are you making fun of me? That’s not what I meant. In the first place, you two weren’t supposed to be in a relationship either.”

“Why?”

“In the first place, Koyomi rejected guys because she had no interest in them, not because she hate them. Probably some trauma regarding her boyfriend. I’m not sure of the details but, I hit the mark right?”

“.....I wonder. And even if that was the case, why would Koyomi go out with me?”

“Because she likes you right.”

“Hah? What are you saying? You are contradicting yourself, Mr. Careful.”

“But.....the reason that you are dating right now.”

“What are you trying to say?”

“She wasn’t in love with you at her. Isn’t that right? It started with a punishment game.”

“.....”

This guy, he noticed it?

“Hmm? What’s with those eyes. Where’s your calm demeanor from earlier?”

“Haa.....This is silly. What’s your basis.....for saying that. I would like it if you stopped lying.”

“You know how there was a rumor going around that you two were falsely going out to each other? I was the one who started it. I was the one who started that rumor, though it was denied by Rekizuki and the theory was erased.”

“Well of course that would happen. Because that’s a lie.”

“You and Koyomi go out with each other even though you don’t like her, an act that plays with a women’s feelings. And Koyomi falsely confessed to you, an act that plays with a man’s feelings. Isn’t this a pretty serious situation?”

“That’s groundless. Absurd. Let’s go eat our lunch already.”

“I have the proof.....”

Then he sticks his chopsticks in front of my eyes. The chopsticks stop just short of hitting my eyeballs.

“Don’t get carried away, okay?”

“That proof.....is just a bluff anyways.”

“Do you really think so?”

“.....”

No, that’s probably the truth.
However, I can’t admit that as long as I don’t know how certain I am about it.

“To bluff at a timing like this. Anyone can bluff as they wish. And if you say that then shouldn’t you have said it from the beginning? Way before you got attracted to Koyomi. The fact that you say this now means that you think it’s certain right?”

“.....I won’t accept it.”

“Hmm. You’re a lot smarter than I thought. But that’s just stalling for time. I’m sure you’ll agree. It would be a pity for Koyomi to make you leave her so suddenly.”

“What if I said I won’t?”

“I can’t get 100% of the proof, but I can get 90%. The students who see it will make it 100% in their own brains. I’m sure there will be a storm of criticism. Especially towards Koyomi.”

“Don’t you like her?.....Scum.”

“I can’t forgive it. To confess to someone who you don’t even like and then fall for him. And then there’s you. To play around with her feelings even though you don’t like her.....How repulsive.”

“I was surprisingly hated. Well, maybe they just like me though.”

I moved my chopsticks out of the way and got up to walk away.

“Come back here tomorrow at lunchtime. I’ll give you one day to answer. How conscientious is that?”

I turned back and glared at him.

“How silly. You can do it yourself.”

“Kukuku.....I told you not to get ahead of yourself right.”

Iseda attacked.

I’m not a big fan of violence, but I don’t have a choice.

Iseda's right fist comes flying. Iseda's right fist flies at me. I brush it off with my left hand, and without pausing, I kick him with my left and he catches it with his right leg.

He immediately counters. He hits him with his right.

"Too soft."

He avoids it and lands a right body blow. I grab him with my left hand.

But he quickly dispels my hand, releases it, and pushes and kicks me in the stomach. He gets out of range.

A direct hit. It hurts. I fell to my knees and stared at Iseda.

"Uu!"

"Hahaha, now you know. Just because you're a little strong in a fight doesn't mean you shouldn't be proud of it. I'm better than you. I'll tell you the details of the terms tomorrow. Think hard today."

"I'm at a huge disadvantage.....you won't even tell me what the terms are and whether or not I'll accept them....."

"Of course. I'm better than you after all."

"Where did you hear it from....."

“I overheard a girl at your part-time job talking to an okama. I was eavesdropping, of course. I recorded it on my voice recorder, of course. It’s a good piece of evidence at this point, but if you dig deeper, you’ll find a lot more, you know?.....Well then, goodbye.”

Iseda said with a grin, and went back to the classroom first.

This guy is smart. He’s not the muscle-brained type that I’m used to.

This is a nuisance.....